A METHOD FOR DISTRIBUTION NETWORK DESIGN AND MODELS FOR OPTION-CONTRACTING STRATEGY WITH BUYERS' LEARNING

A Thesis
Presented to
The Academic Faculty

by

Jinpyo Lee

In Partial Fulfillment
of the Requirements for the Degree
Doctor of Philosophy in the
H. Milton Stewart School of Industrial and Systems Engineering

Georgia Institute of Technology
August 2008

A METHOD FOR DISTRIBUTION NETWORK DESIGN AND MODELS FOR OPTION-CONTRACTING STRATEGY WITH BUYERS' LEARNING

Approved by:

Professor Anton J. Kleywegt, Advisor
H. Milton Stewart School of Industrial and Systems Engineering
Georgia Institute of Technology

Professor Amy R. Ward
Marshall School of Business
University of Southern California

Professor Jim Dai
H. Milton Stewart School of Industrial and Systems Engineering
Georgia Institute of Technology

Professor Hayriye Ayhan
H. Milton Stewart School of Industrial and Systems Engineering
Georgia Institute of Technology

Professor Alan Erera
H. Milton Stewart School of Industrial and Systems Engineering
Georgia Institute of Technology

Date Approved: 13 May 2008

To my parent and family...

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I am indebted to many people for their help and support during my graduate studies. This thesis would not have been possible without them. First and foremost, I would like to thank my advisors Anton Kleywegt and Amy Ward. I would like to thank Dr. Ward for serving as my advisor for the first year of my Ph.D. studies. Dr. Ward provided me with a solid foundation in stochastic process area and I am thankful to her for the devotion and support which she showed me as her student. I would next like to thank Dr. Kleywegt for assuming responsibility as my principal advisor for the all my studies. I am especially thankful to him for his insistence on always finding the proper direction of my studies. It is difficult to express all my gratitude to Dr. Kleywegt. Dr. Kleywegt has showed me his enthusiasm, his inspiration, and his great patience during my studies. This is something which I will always carry with me as I continue on in my life.

I would like to thank Dr. Jim Dai, Dr. Hayriye Ayhan and Dr. Alan Erera for serving on my dissertation committee. Their suggestions and comments are extremely valuable for me to improve this dissertation.

I am also very appreciative of the unwavering support my friends and family back home had for me throughout this work. Finally, I would like to thank my friends, without whom this work would not have been nearly as enjoyable. There are so many of them to thank that I cannot list them all. I will simply say that the details of many of them could perhaps fill up yet another volume of this thesis.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

LIST OF TABLES

LIST OF FIGURES

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

1.1 Introduction

This dissertation contains two topics in operations research. The first topic is to design a distribution network to facilitate the repeated movement of shipments from many origins to many destinations. A method is developed to estimate transportation costs as a function of the number of terminals and moreover to determine the best number of terminals. The second topic is to study dynamics of a buyer's behavior when the buyer can buy goods through both option contracts and a spot market and the buyer attempts to learn the probability distribution of the spot price. The buyer estimates the spot price distribution as though it is exogenous. However, the spot price distribution is not exogenous but is endogenous because it is affected by the buyer's decision regarding option purchases.

1.1.1 Continuous Approximation for Distribution Network

This research was motivated by our collaboration with two companies that manage their own inbound distribution systems. One is a large retailer that obtains merchandize from many suppliers in the US as well as overseas. The origins are suppliers and import warehouses in the US. The destinations are individual retail stores. The other company is a distributor of a large variety of products, most of which are sold to retailers, and some to industrial consumers. The origins are the distributor's suppliers, most of whom are located in the US and Canada, and the destinations are the distributor's distribution centers located close to various cities in the US. We consider the design of a distribution network for the above companies to facilitate the repeated movement of shipments from many origins to many destinations. A sufficient number of the origin-destination shipments require less than the capacity of a vehicle, so that consolidation of shipments is economical. The case is considered in which consolidation takes place at terminals, and each shipment is assumed to move through exactly one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination.

We formulate this problem as a mixed integer linear program. Very small instances of such a problem can be solved with available software, CPLEX. In computational tests, most instances with 6 origins, 6 destinations, and 3 candidate terminals, could not be solved — the computer's memory was insufficient to complete the branch-and-bound procedure. The problems in the real world have hundreds of origins and destinations, and thus it seems that it will be impractical to solve the mixed integer linear program.

The first challenge in designing such a distribution system is to determine how many terminals there should be. Transportation cost is decreasing in the number of terminals, but the cost of owning and operating terminals is increasing in the number of terminals. Since we focus on systems in which each shipment moves through one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination, handling costs do not vary with the number of terminals. The second challenge in designing such a system is to determine the best locations for the chosen number of terminals. We argue that one can accurately determine the best number of terminals without exactly determining the best locations of the terminals. We also argue that to determine the best number of terminals it is important to accurately estimate how operational costs, in this case transportation costs, vary as a function of the number of terminals. The important operational variables are the numbers of terminals that serve each origin and each destination. It is shown that these variables have an important impact on the transportation costs, and thus should be taken into account when choosing the number of terminals. The major part of the work is the development of a new Continuous Approximation (CA) approach for the estimation of transportation cost, especially detour cost and linehaul cost (the average distance from a terminal to the center of the points on a route), as a function of the number of terminals as well as the numbers of terminals that serve each origin and each destination, before knowing the exact terminal locations. Then we use these estimates to search for the best number of terminals as well as the numbers of terminals that serve each origin and each destination. Thereafter the terminals are located, and the resulting design is evaluated through detailed calculations of the vehicle routes to move all the freight from its origins to its destinations.

1.1.2 Optimal Option-Contracting Strategy with Buyers' Learning

Traditionally, in revenue management, it is assumed that buyers make purchasing decisions, depending on the current given price, which is referred to as a myopic buyer. However, this traditional assumption underestimates the sophistication of typical buyer's behavior, since the buyer might take into account forecasted future prices. Another assumption is that the buyer behaves in a very sophisticated way. Recently, some research has considered a buyer who is price-sensitive with some patience and times his/her purchasing decisions while taking into account the dynamic pricing policy of the seller, which is referred to as a strategic buyer. It is assumed that the sophisticated buyer knows the seller's pricing policy over the entire time horizon in advance. However, this assumption overestimates the buyer's sophistication too much. We want to consider more reasonable and practical assumptions about the buyer's forecasting behavior than the previous ones. We assume that the buyer has observed the previous prices, and then forecasts the future price with the empirical distribution constructed by the observed prices. We analyze this buyer's learning behavior with option contracts and a spot market. In the first stage, the seller offers an option price and strike price to the buyer. Then, the buyer forecasts the spot price in the second stage using the empirical distribution constructed by the previously observed spot prices, and decides how many options to buy. In the second stage, the seller decides the spot price for the good, and then the buyer decides how many non-contract goods to buy in the spot market. We consider the sequence of these two stage problems so that the buyer can observe one more spot price in every period in order to construct the empirical distribution. Traditionally, option contracting problems are considered for i.i.d spot prices with an exogenous distribution. The spot price distribution is exogenous means that the spot price distribution in each period does not depend on the buyer's first stage decision. In the problem we consider, the spot prices are not identical and not independent, and the distribution is not exogenous. This is considered in our model for the following reason: The spot price in the second stage depends on what the buyer decides in the first stage, which is the quantity of options, since the seller makes the spot pricing decision in the second stage based on how many goods are available to sell through the spot market and thus how many options have been sold in the first stage. The buyer's decision on the quantity of options in the first stage is made based on the empirical distribution constructed by the previous spot prices. Thus, the spot price in the second stage depends on the previous spot prices. This implies that the spot prices are not identically and not independently distributed. Moreover, we show that, if the buyer decides to buy a higher quantity of options in the first stage, the seller would select a lower spot price in the second stage in stochastic ordering sense and vice versa. This implies that the spot price is not exogenously but endogenously decided. These findings raise interesting research questions: How would the seller's spot pricing decision be influenced by the option contracts bought in the first stage? Does the sequence of the quantity of options bought by the buyer converge to any finite limit? If so, how can it be characterized and be compared with the Nash equilibrium? The impact of the buyer's dynamically learning behavior on the seller's spot pricing decisions in multiple periods has not been well studied in the existing literature.

CHAPTER II

A METHOD FOR DISTRIBUTION NETWORK DESIGN

2.1 Introduction

In most distribution systems goods are transported from various origins to various destinations. For example, many retail chains manage distribution systems in which goods are transported from a number of suppliers to a number of retail stores. Much of this transportation takes place by truck, and it often happens that the flow rates for a substantial fraction of the origin-destination pairs are so small that it is not economical to send goods directly from each origin to each destination in a dedicated truck. That is, it is often more economical to consolidate the shipments of various origin-destination pairs, and transport such consolidated shipments in the same truck at the same time. There are many ways in which such consolidation can be accomplished. Next a number of examples are given.

Figure 1 shows the locations of origins (circles) and destinations (squares) for a small example. Suppose that freight has to be moved from each origin to each destination in the example every week. To keep the example simple, the volume of freight is not specified that has to be moved from each origin to each destination every week, but rather suppose that each week a truck can accommodate the total freight flowing from up to four origins to all destinations, and the total freight flowing from all origins to up to three destinations. The question at hand is how to design the transportation operations to move all freight each week at minimum cost.

There are many alternative designs, and only a few examples are given that are

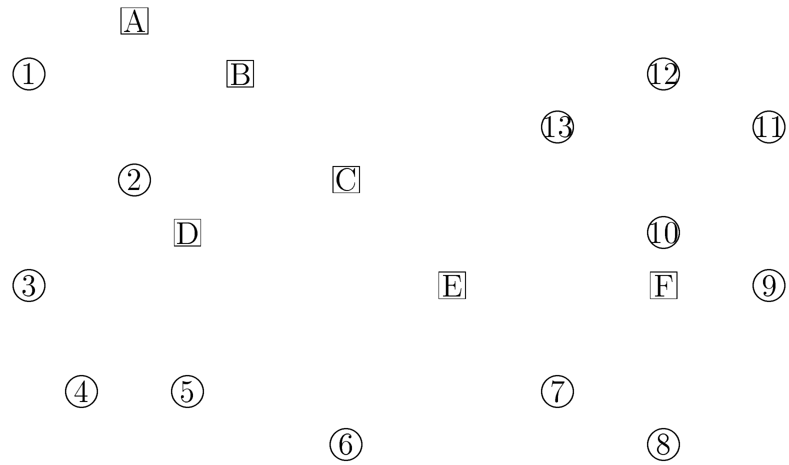


Figure 1: Origins (circles) and destinations (squares) for freight flows.

qualitatively different from each other. One alternative is to use out-of-vehicle consolidation, that is, to consolidate freight at terminal facilities, also called consolidation terminals, transshipment terminals, crossdocks, or transfer facilities. There are many alternative ways to design transportation operations involving terminal facilities. Here two simple, but important, ways are presented, distinguished based on the number of terminals that each shipment passes through on its way from its origin to its destination. First, even if there are more than one terminal in the system, each shipment may move through only one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination. This type of system is quite widely used in the USA to distribute goods from multiple suppliers to multiple distribution centers or retail stores. In such a system it is typical for each vehicle to be based at a terminal, and to execute routes that take freight from the terminal to particular destinations, and after the freight has been delivered, to visit particular origins and collect freight at these origins and take it back to the terminal, for organization according to delivery routes and later delivery. This type of distribution network is called a *multistar many-to-many distribution network*, and is the type of system for which a design approach is proposed in this paper. We will point out some of the advantages and disadvantages of such a system soon, but first we give an example. Figure 2 shows a solution using out-of-vehicle consolidation with two terminals denoted by X and Y, in which each shipment moves through only one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination. The solution in Figure 2 consists of the following routes: $X, D, B, A, 1, 2, 3, X$; $X, C, E, F, 6, 5, 4, X$; $Y, C, B, A, 13, 12, 11, 10, Y$; and $Y, D, E, F, 9, 8, 7, Y$. For example, consider a shipment that has to go from origin 1 to destination F. One week the shipment is picked up at origin 1 by the vehicle that executes route $X, C, B, A, 1, 2, 3, X$, then at terminal X the shipment is offloaded from the vehicle and loaded onto the vehicle that will execute the route $X, D, F, E, 6, 5, 4, X$ next, and later the shipment is delivered at destination F while the vehicle executes this route.

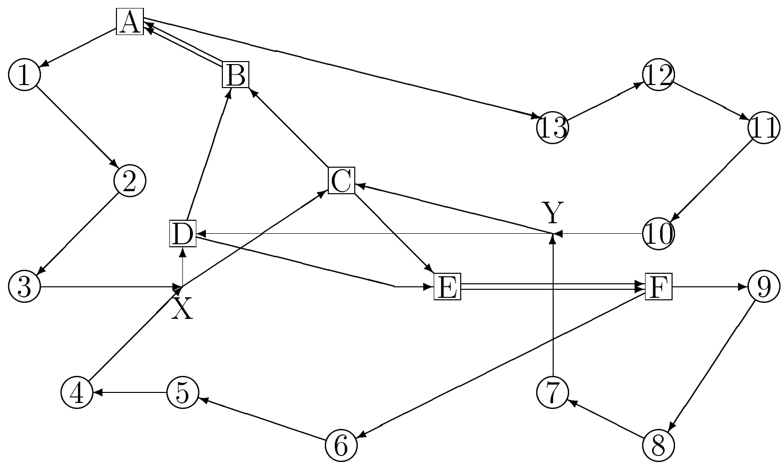


Figure 2: Solution in which each shipment moves through only one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination.

Note that with such a system sufficient routes have to be chosen to ensure that all freight move from its origins to its destinations, without exceeding constraints such as vehicle capacity constraints. In Figure 2, freight can move from every origin to every destination, because each destination receives truck visits from both terminals (but each origin receives truck visits from only one terminal). In practice, it seems quite common to ensure that freight can move from every origin to every destination either by serving each origin from each terminal, or by serving each destination from each terminal. However, such a solution may lead to unnecessarily many visits during which very little freight is picked up or delivered, and unnecessarily long distances traveled by vehicles. In this paper we search for more economical ways to facilitate all freight flows.

An alternative system that uses out-of-vehicle consolidation is the following. Each origin and each destination is served from one terminal only, typically the terminal closest to the point (origin or destination). To enable freight to move from every origin to every destination, vehicles also move freight between each pair of terminals. The vehicles that move freight between the terminals are often of a different type (usually larger) than the vehicles that pick up and deliver freight at origins and destinations. Such a distribution network is called a *complete topology many-to-many distribution network*. In such a system, each shipment moves through either one or two terminals on its way from its origin to its destination. Figure 3 shows a solution using out-of-vehicle consolidation with two terminals denoted by X and Y, in which each origin and each destination is served from one terminal only. For example, consider a shipment that has to go from origin 1 to destination F. One week the shipment is picked up at origin 1 by the vehicle that executes route $X, D, B, A, 1, 2, 3, X$, then at terminal X the shipment is offloaded from the vehicle and loaded onto the vehicle that goes from terminal X to terminal Y, then at terminal Y the shipment is offloaded from the vehicle and loaded onto the vehicle that will execute the route $Y, F, 9, 8, 7, Y$ next, and later the shipment is delivered at destination F while the vehicle executes this route.

There are various other systems in which each shipment moves through one or more terminals on its way from its origin to its destination. Some such systems, such as complete topology systems in which an origin or a destination may be served by more than one nearby terminals, are reviewed in Section 2.2. Another related design is a *star topology many-to-many distribution network* with a central terminal through which all freight flows. Specifically, with a star topology, each shipment travels from

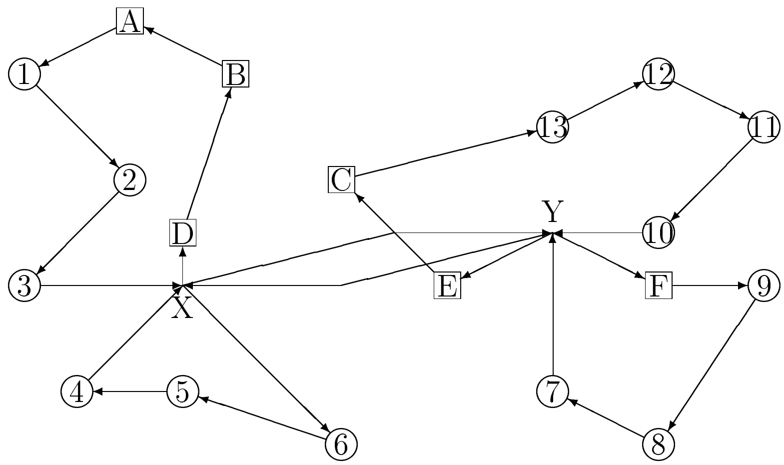


Figure 3: Solution in which each shipment moves through only one or two terminals on its way from its origin to its destination.

its origin through the pickup and delivery terminal serving the origin to the central terminal, from there to the pickup and delivery terminal serving the destination, and from there to the destination. Thus, in such a system, each shipment travels through three terminals on its way from its origin to its destination. Some practical systems, such as distribution systems for small packages, can be much more complicated than the basic system types described above, involving a hierarchy of terminals and many vehicle types traveling between terminals, with different shipments moving through different numbers of terminals on their way from their origins to their destinations.

Complete topology, star topology, and hierarchical systems may facilitate solutions with less total travel distance than a multistar system. The transportation cost with such systems may also be less if the cost per unit freight and distance is less for the vehicles that travel between the terminals than for the pickup and delivery vehicles. However, when a shipment moves through more than one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination it requires more loading, offloading, and additional load sorting operations, and such additional handling incurs not only more cost, but also increases the risk that shipments are lost or damaged. Which of the types of systems is best depends on the importance of handling related costs relative to transportation costs.

Finally, an alternative that does not require any terminals is to use in-vehicle consolidation. For example, one vehicle may pick up the loads at origins 1, 2, and 3, in that order, that have to go to destinations A, B, and D, and then drive to destinations D, B, and A, in that order, and deliver these loads. From destination A, the vehicle would next return to origin 1, ready to repeat the cycle $1, 2, 3, D, B, A, 1$. Other vehicles would perform similar cycles. Sufficient cycles have to be chosen to ensure that all freight move from its origins to its destinations, without exceeding constraints such as vehicle capacity constraints. For example, if in addition to cycle $1, 2, 3, D, B, A, 1$, cycle $1, 2, 3, E, F, C, 1$ is performed, then all the freight originating from origins 1, 2, and 3 could be moved to its various destinations. In-vehicle consolidation is a reasonable alternative if for many of the origin-destination pairs, the amount of freight is not much less than the vehicle capacity. Figure 4 shows a solution using in-vehicle consolidation with the following cycles: $1, 2, 3, D, B, A, 1$; $1, 2, 3, E, F, C, 1$; $4, 5, 6, D, B, A, 4$; $4, 5, 6, E, F, C, 4$; $7, 8, 9, 10, A, B, D, 7$; $7, 8, 9, 10, F, C, E, 7$; $13, 11, 12, A, B, D, 13$; and $11, 12, 13, C, E, F, 11$.

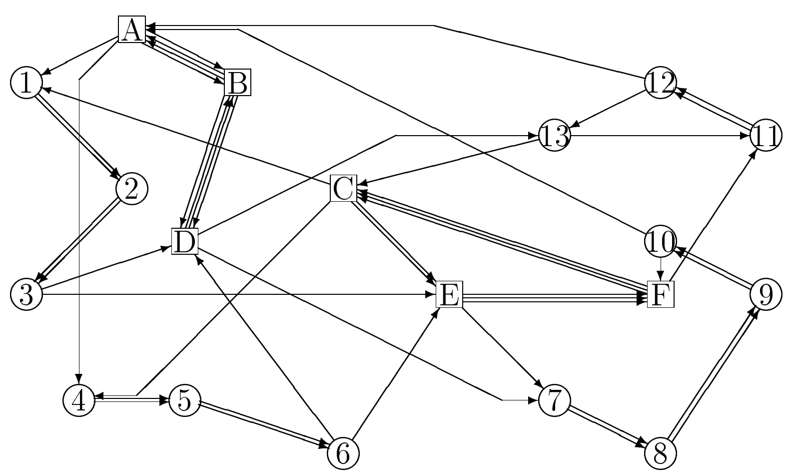


Figure 4: Solution using in-vehicle consolidation.

In this paper we focus on multistar many-to-many distribution systems in which each shipment moves through one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination.

These systems are sufficiently widely used to justify an in-depth study focused on such systems. In addition, sometimes there is interest in determining which basic type of system is the best for a particular case, and clearly it is desirable to be able to estimate the cost of the optimal design for each type of system in order to find the best overall system. Our major motivation is to develop a method to design such distribution systems. To facilitate such design, we develop a *continuous approximation* (CA) method to estimate the cost of the operations that will be conducted with a given design, and then we use these estimates to search for a good design. Chosen designs are then evaluated with more detailed calculations of the resulting operations.

As mentioned, often a vehicle makes all the deliveries at the destinations on its route before it picks up any new loads at the origins on its route. Such a practice may increase the travel distance over what would have been possible if pickups and deliveries could have been done in any sequence. However, often this is infeasible or undesirable, sometimes because of scheduling constraints (for example, loads are delivered at the destinations in the morning and picked up from origins in the afternoon), or because loads that are picked up before all deliveries have been done would obstruct access to the loads in the back of the truck that still have to be delivered. We focus on the case in which all deliveries on a route take place before any pickups take place. Some aspects of our approach can also be used if pickups and deliveries can be done in any sequence on a route.

This work was motivated by our collaboration with two companies that manage their own inbound distribution systems. One is a large retailer that obtains merchandize from many suppliers in the USA as well as overseas. For the purpose of the distribution system in the USA, the ports of import (more precisely, warehouses close to the ports) are regarded as the origins of the imported freight. Thus the origins are suppliers and import warehouses in the USA. The destinations are individual retail stores. The retailer owns and operates a number of terminals. Each shipment moves through one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination with transportation provided by independent contract carriers. In the current system, each origin is served by all the terminals, and each destination is served by the terminal closest to the destination. The greater the travel distances of the carriers' vehicles, the more the retailer has to pay the carriers, and thus the retailer has an incentive to design a distribution system that minimizes the total distance traveled, also taking into account the cost of owning and operating a terminal, and handling related costs. The retailer was considering increasing the number of terminals, and asked for design guidelines. The other company is a distributor of a large variety of products, most of which are sold to retailers, and some to industrial consumers. The origins are the distributor's suppliers, most of whom are located in the USA and Canada, and the destinations are the distributor's distribution centers located close to various cities in the USA. The distributor owns and operates a number of terminals, as well as a fleet of trucks. As for the retailer, each shipment moves through one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination. Unlike the retailer, in the current system, most origins are served by one terminal, and each destination is served by all the terminals. Products are further distributed from the distributor's distribution centers to the distributor's customers with a separate fleet of smaller vehicles.

The first challenge in designing such a system is to determine how many terminals there should be. Transportation cost is decreasing in the number of terminals, but the cost of owning and operating terminals is increasing in the number of terminals. Since we focus on systems in which each shipment moves through one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination, handling costs do not vary with the number of terminals. The second challenge in designing such a system is to determine the best locations for the chosen number of terminals. We argue that one can accurately determine the best number of terminals without exactly determining the best locations of the terminals. We also argue that to determine the best number of terminals it is important to accurately estimate how operational costs, in this case transportation costs, vary as a function of the number of terminals. As the examples above already indicate, important operational variables are the numbers of terminals that serve each origin and each destination. It will be shown that these variables have an important impact on the transportation costs, and thus should be taken into account when choosing the number of terminals. The major part of the work is the development of a new CA approach for the estimation of transportation cost, and especially linehaul cost (the average distance from a terminal to the center of the points on a route), as a function of the number of terminals as well as the numbers of terminals that serve each origin and each destination, before knowing the exact terminal locations. Then we use these estimates to search for the best number of terminals as well as the numbers of terminals that serve each origin and each destination. Thereafter the terminals are located, and the resulting design is evaluated through detailed calculations of the vehicle routes to move all the freight from its origins to its destinations.

The remainder of this chapter is organized as follows. We review related literature in Section 2.2, and we formulate the problem in Section 2.3. Section 2.4 provides a qualitative discussion of the factors influencing total cost, and identifies the factors that do and do not seem important in the selection of the best number of terminals. Section 2.5 describes our CA method for the design of multistar many-to-many distribution networks. We also provide a procedure for making operational decisions (which terminals to use for each origin-destination flow and how to route the vehicles from each terminal) in Section 2.6 that we use in Section 2.7 to evaluate our solutions compared with those produced by a widely used approach.

2.2 Related Literature

Optimization problems that incorporate both facility location and vehicle routing decisions, such as the problem in this paper, are called *location-routing problems.* (49)

proposed a classification of location-routing problems, and gave an overview of both exact branch-and-bound algorithms and heuristics for a number of specific location-routing problems. However, the paper considered only the case of a single commodity — all shipments were considered as the same product, and thus a shipment picked up from an origin did not have a specified destination. In the problem we consider, each shipment has a specified origin-destination pair. Also, the paper did not consider the possibility of deliveries and pickups on the same route. The method that we propose is applicable both for the case with deliveries and pickups on separate routes, as well as for the case with deliveries and pickups on the same routes. The type of approach that we consider, namely a two-phase approach in which location decisions are made in the first phase and routing decisions are made repeatedly, possibly with varying data, in the second phase, and future routing costs are approximated when location decisions are made, was mentioned on p. 192 as a promising research area. (50) formulated and solved integer programming models of stochastic location-routing problems. The problems involve decisions regarding the location of a single depot among a set of candidate sites, the vehicle fleet size, and the pickup routes. All these decisions are made before the pickup quantities become known. The models constrain either the probability of a route failure or the expected penalty of a route failure due to insufficient capacity to handle the pickups on a route. (71) surveyed strategic production-distribution problems, with special emphasis on features that are important for international supply chains. Some of the problems in the survey involve facility location and distribution, and an overview is given of some mixed integer programming formulations and tools for solving these problems.

The approach that we consider can be regarded as a *continuous approximation* (CA) approach. In the transportation literature, the term "continuous approximation" refers to an approach in which some problem data, typically discrete data such as the locations of origins, destinations, or facilities, are approximated with distributions, typically continuous distributions such as the uniform distribution. (46), (8), and (7) did some path-breaking work on CA in transportation. (59) described the use of CA methods to provide insight into the qualitative behavior of various discrete optimization problems and sometimes to find good solutions for such problems. Various researchers developed these ideas further. Here we only give a brief overview of this line of research, and we compare our work with some of the more closely related work. (48) surveyed and classified the literature on CA methods in freight distribution.

(25) proposed a method to construct good tours in rectangles and presented formulas, similar to that of (7), to approximate the lengths of the tours. (24) proposed a cluster-first route-second method to construct vehicle routes and presented formulas to approximate the lengths of the routes. The effect of the proportions of a rectangular district for each cluster on the sum of the linehaul and detour travel distances for the cluster was studied. The results in (25) were used to approximate the detour travel distances. We also follow the approach of separately approximating the linehaul and detour travel distances.

The approximations in (24) were used to study various *one-to-many* distribution problems, that is, problems with one origin and many destinations. (Note that a result for a one-to-many problem gives a result for a many-to-one problem that is symmetric to it and vice versa). For example, (14) developed formulas to approximate the transportation and inventory costs for one-to-many direct shipping and peddling (routes with multiple stops) distribution strategies. (26) derived expressions for transportation and inventory costs, argued that vehicles should be fully loaded (assuming that inventory costs are not very high), and then derived an expression for the optimal frequency with which to pick up loads for different classes of items. (28) showed that if products going to the different destinations are homogeneous, the same vehicles operate everywhere, and there are no route length restrictions, then in-vehicle consolidation is cheaper than out-of-vehicle consolidation, that is, transshipments are not economical. (29) considered a setting with more general vehicle capacity constraints than (28). Also, different items have different characteristics, so that optimal vehicle utilization (minimizing total vehicle miles traveled) may require careful selection of the mix of items to place on different vehicles. In such a setting, in contrast with (28), it may be optimal to consolidate some items at a terminal into more efficient load combinations. (15) considered a similar setting as (28), except that (15) considered the case in which there are two vehicle sizes, and the larger vehicles cannot be used for delivering at the destinations. Distribution networks with transshipment terminals, in which larger vehicles transport freight from the origin directly to terminals, and smaller vehicles transport freight from terminals on routes to destinations, were compared with distribution networks without transshipment terminals, in which smaller vehicles transport freight from the origin on routes to destinations. (18) considered the same setting as (15), except that in (15), each larger vehicle can visit only one terminal on a trip (that is, larger vehicles do not make multiple stop routes), whereas in (18) larger vehicles may visit multiple terminals on a route. Unlike many of the other papers, and similar to ours, (31) considered a problem that involves both design and operational decisions. Specifically, the design of a hierarchical distribution network with one origin and many destinations was studied. Also unlike many of the other papers, the case in which vehicles with different transportation costs per distance operate at different levels in the hierarchy was considered. As a result, it may be optimal for a shipment to undergo multiple transshipments from the origin to its destination.

Continuous approximations have also been used to study *many-to-many* distribution problems, that is, problems with many origins and many destinations such as the problem that we consider. (23) considered many-to-many demand responsive transportation systems, such as taxicab systems with at most one request being transported at a time and dial-a-bus systems that allow multiple requests to be transported at a time. Three routing algorithms were modeled, and approximate expressions were derived for the average waiting times and average riding times of customers. (12) derived cost expressions for the following cases: (1) Direct shipping from one origin to one destination. (2) Direct shipping from many origins to one destination. (3) Direct shipping from one origin to many destinations. (4) Direct shipping from many origins to many destinations. (5) Shipping from many origins to many destinations with all loads moving through a single consolidation terminal. Vehicle routing is not considered — shipments move directly from each origin to the terminal, and directly from the terminal to each destination. (6) Shipping from many origins to many destinations with some loads moving directly from origin to destination and other loads moving through a single consolidation terminal. Vehicle routing is not considered. Our work differs from (12) as follows:

1. We consider the problem of shipping from many origins to many destinations only, and not the other (easier) cases.

2. In our problem, the number and locations of terminals are to be determined, but in cases (5) and (6) above, it is given that there is a single terminal with a given location.

3. We consider transportation costs and terminal costs, but not production setup costs and inventory costs. Instead, as is the case with all the applications that we have worked on, it is given that the transportation schedule repeats periodically (daily or weekly), and thus the inventory costs are not affected by the distribution decisions.

4. We take vehicle capacity constraints into account.

5. We consider vehicle routing — we allow a vehicle to visit multiple origins and/or multiple destinations on a route.

(11) described a number of simple models that were used to evaluate strategies for the distribution of parts from suppliers to General Motors assembly plants. A variety of strategies involving direct shipping, shipping through a single terminal, as well as peddling, were evaluated for the shipments from a single supplier (Delco) with 3 plants to 30 GM assembly plants. The models considered the trade-off between transportation costs that favor fewer larger shipments and inventory costs that favor more frequent smaller shipments. A decomposition approach that exploited the small number of origins was proposed to find the best combination of direct shipping and shipping through the terminal.

(42), (27), (43), (16), and (17) are closely related to each other. These papers all considered a setting with an equal number of origins and destinations independently and uniformly distributed in a square (sometimes rectangular) region. The flow rate is the same for all origin-destination pairs. Terminals are arranged in a square (sometimes rectangular) grid. The following four distribution strategies were considered by several of these papers (as described in more detail below, some papers considered only some of these strategies, and some also considered other strategies):

1. One-terminal-nearest-terminal: Each shipment moves through exactly one terminal. All shipments from an origin move through the terminal closest to the origin irrespective of the location of the destination of the shipment.

2. One-terminal-minimum-distance: Each shipment moves through exactly one terminal. A shipment from an origin moves through one of the (typically four) terminals that surround the origin in the grid, that minimizes the travel distance from the origin through the terminal to the destination.

3. Two-terminal-nearest-terminal: Each shipment moves through one or two terminals. All shipments from an origin move through the terminal closest to the origin irrespective of the location of the destination of the shipment, and all shipments to a destination move through the terminal closest to the destination irrespective of the location of the origin of the shipment.

4. Two-terminal-minimum-distance: Each shipment moves through one or two terminals. A shipment from an origin moves through one of the (typically four) terminals that surround the origin in the grid, and a shipment to a destination moves through one of the (typically four) terminals that surround the destination in the grid, to minimize the travel distance from the origin through the terminals to the destination.

(42) derived expressions for the average distance from origin to destination for the one-terminal-nearest-terminal and the two-terminal-nearest-terminal strategies. The expressions were compared with average travel distances computed between the 37 largest standard metropolitan statistical areas in the United States. (27) considered the case of one-to-many distribution routes, without transhipment terminals, and the case of many-to-many distribution routes, without transhipment terminals, in addition to the four strategies mentioned above. (43) compared the four strategies in terms of (a) average travel distance, (b) number of terminals, and (c) number of links. For a given average travel distance, the number of terminals and number of links were regarded as measures of consolidation. (16) considered the case in which the transportation cost per unit distance between terminals may be less than the transportation cost per unit distance between origins and terminals and between terminals and destinations. The paper compared the two-terminal-nearest-terminal strategy, the two-terminal-minimum-distance strategy, and the two-terminal-minimum-cost strategy, that takes into account the difference between the local transportation cost and the transportation cost between terminals. The expressions for the minimum cost

were used to derive the optimal spacing between the terminals in the grid for a given number of terminals. Unlike the other papers, the resulting service areas of the terminals were not equal. (17) evaluated the accuracy of the approximation formula for minimum average transportation cost derived in (16). The approximation formula was quite accurate, taking into account the extent with which the idealized assumptions of the approximation were violated. With two terminals, the errors were around 5%. However, as the number of terminals increased, the errors tended to increase as well. Our paper differs from these papers as follows:

1. These papers assume that origins and destinations are independently and uniformly distributed in a square or rectangular region, whereas we allow arbitrary distributions of origins and destinations in a rectangle.

2. These papers assumed that the number of origins equals the number of destinations, or equivalently that the density of origins equals the density of destinations, whereas we allow the numbers of origins and destinations to be different.

3. These papers assumed that the flow rate from origins to destinations is a deterministic constant for all origin-destination pairs, whereas we allow flow rates that are random with different marginal distributions for different origin-destination pairs.

4. These papers required terminals to be located on a square or rectangular grid in the region (and thus that the number of terminals be a square number or the product of the numbers of rows and columns in the grid), whereas we allow any number of terminals, but we assume that, except for a single centrally located terminal, the terminals are independently and uniformly distributed in the rectangular region.

5. We focus on the case in which each shipment moves through exactly one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination, whereas these papers consider

various strategies in which each shipment moves through two terminals on its way from its origin to its destination.

6. For the case in which each shipment moves through exactly one terminal, the papers that considered this case required that each shipment moves through the terminal closest to the origin (one-terminal-nearest-terminal routing), or each shipment moves through one of the (typically four) terminals closest to the origin (one-terminal-minimum-distance routing). That is, for one-terminal-nearest-terminal routing, each origin is served by vehicles from the closest terminal and each destination is served by vehicles from all terminals, and for one-terminal-minimum-distance routing, each origin is served by vehicles from the closest four terminals, and each destination is served by vehicles from all terminals. It is easily seen that it can be very inefficient to serve each destination by vehicles from all terminals. We allow each origin and each destination to be served by vehicles from a chosen subset of terminals in addition to the central terminal, where the number of terminals that serves an origin/destination depends on the total flow rate from/to the origin/destination.

As mentioned before, our approach allows pickups on the same routes as deliveries. Some CA work has addressed similar ideas. (44) considered a distribution problem with two terminals that serve as origins, and multiple destinations. The items originating at the two terminals are different, so that items may be sent from a terminal to destinations close to the other terminal. As a result, after delivering the items originating at a terminal to some destinations, it may be better for a vehicle to next proceed to the other terminal to pick up loads there. The paper develops approximate expressions for the linehaul and detour distances if a vehicle travels from one terminal to a delivery district, and thereafter travels to the other terminal. (30) derived expressions to approximate the cost of vehicle routes to do both pickups and deliveries, where the deliveries on a route are completed before any pickups are done.

It is assumed that the pickup and delivery points are independent and uniformly distributed in a region that can be partitioned into approximate rectangles, that each route can make at most C delivery stops, and that there is no bound on the number of pickups that a route can make.

As mentioned above, very few papers address CA methods for network design, that is, to determine the number and locations of terminals. It was mentioned that (31) considered hierarchical network design for one-to-many distribution. In addition, (45) considered the design of a many-to-many freight distribution network in a local area, such as a metropolitan area. The area has one gateway terminal located in the center through which all shipments to and from locations outside the area pass. Unlike our problem, origins and destinations in the area are independently and uniformly distributed. Similar to our problem, pickup and delivery terminals are uniformly distributed, and the number of pickup and delivery terminals is a design variable. Each origin and each destination is served on vehicle routes from the pickup and delivery terminal in which service district it is located. Pickup and delivery routes are separate, and the vehicles used for pickup and delivery routes are different from the vehicles used to transport freight between terminals. As is the case in our problem, transportation and terminal costs were considered, and the headway between successive routes was given. The optimal number of pickup and delivery terminals and the optimal number of stops on a vehicle route were determined for two distribution systems, namely a star topology and a complete topology. The costs for the two systems were compared, and a number of conclusions were made, such as that the star topology is better if the interterminal vehicles are large relative to the pickup and delivery vehicles, and if handling cost is small. Both (33) and (61) considered problems in which a number of facilities and their locations are to be selected, and the region is to be partitioned into service areas such that each facility supplies the destinations in one of the service areas. (33) considered only outbound transportation costs from the facilities to the destinations, in addition to fixed facility costs and facility capacity costs. (61) considered both inbound transportation costs from a single origin to the facilities as well as outbound transportation costs from the facilities to the destinations; thus the problem considered by (61) corresponded to a special case of the one-to-many distribution network design problem considered by (31) in which each shipment moves through one terminal from the origin to its destination. (33) developed a CA that required a service area size, or equivalently a terminal density, to be selected at each point in the region. (61) proposed an algorithm to convert the service area size as a function of the point in the region to a solution with discrete terminal locations, and they also evaluated the differences between the CA costs and the costs resulting from their algorithm. In all the design problems described above, the input data include the spatial density of destination demand, and not many-to-many origin-destination flows as in our problem. Recently, (32) studied a Stackelberg game in which location decisions are made by two competitors. Each competitor can decide to locate many facilities, and the location decisions are represented with location density functions, instead of with discrete variables that specify the exact location of each facility.

2.3 Model Formulation

In this section we give a formulation of the problem we want to solve. The purpose is threefold. First, we want to give a precise statement of one version of the problem that we want to solve. Second, we want to determine what size instances can be solved with available software. Third, we want to introduce a common approximation to our problem that we will later compare with our CA method.

Distribution operations take place repeatedly over multiple time periods. We consider distribution systems in which (1) each shipment moves through one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination, and (2) in each time period, the vehicles based at each open terminal transport goods to be delivered from the terminal to the destinations of the shipments, and thereafter pick up goods at their origins and return again to the terminals where the vehicles are based. Specifically, in each time period, goods have to be moved from origins in a set $\mathcal{O}$ to destinations in a set $\mathcal{D}$. There is a finite set Ω of flow scenarios. Each scenario $\omega \in \Omega$ has a probability or weight $p(\omega)$. The set Ω may represent the support of an input probability distribution, or may be obtained from an input probability distribution by sampling, or may represent predictable differences in flow rates in different time periods such as seasonal differences, or a combination of the above. For each scenario $\omega \in \Omega$, let flow rate $q_{ij}(\omega) \geq 0$ denote the quantity of goods per time period that must be moved from origin $i \in \mathcal{O}$ to destination $j \in \mathcal{D}$ in scenario ω. Each vehicle has the same capacity Q_v. There is a set $\mathcal{X}_E$ of existing terminals, and a set $\mathcal{X}_P$ of potential terminals. For each terminal $m \in \mathcal{X} := \mathcal{X}_E \cup \mathcal{X}_P$, let c_m denote the difference in cost per time period between having terminal m open and operating, and not having terminal m open and operating. For each $i, j \in \mathcal{O} \cup \mathcal{D} \cup \mathcal{X}$, let d_{ij} denote the cost to move a vehicle from point i to point j. We assume that the vehicle movement cost does not depend on the load carried by the vehicle. In addition to vehicle movement costs, there is a cost of C_v per time period for each vehicle based at each terminal, whether the vehicle is used or not, and a cost of c_v for each vehicle that is used during a time period, independent of the distance traveled by the vehicle.

We have to decide which of the existing and potential terminals should be open for all scenarios. Let binary decision variable u_m denote whether terminal m is open, that is,

$$u_m \quad := \quad \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if terminal } m \in \mathcal{X} \text{ is open} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \tag{1}$$

Let integer decision variable n_v^m denote the number of vehicles assigned to terminal m.

For each scenario $\omega \in \Omega$, we have to decide how to move each shipment from its origin to its destination through the open terminals. That is, for each origin-destination pair $(i,j) \in \mathcal{O} \times \mathcal{D}$ with $q_{ij}(\omega) > 0$, we have to determine through which open terminal the shipment will move, and we have to decide how all the movements will be handled with vehicle routes. Let the binary decision variable $z_{ij}^m(\omega)$ denote whether the shipment from i to j moves through terminal m, that is,

$$z_{ij}^m(\omega) := \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if terminal } m \in \mathcal{X} \text{ is used in moving the shipment in scenario } \omega \in \Omega \\ & \text{from origin } i \in \mathcal{O} \text{ to destination } j \in \mathcal{D} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases} \tag{2}$$

The definition of $z_{ij}^m(\omega)$ implies that the assignment of an origin-destination flow to a terminal may vary according to the scenario. If the assignment of origin-destination flows to terminals must be the same for all scenarios, then one only needs z_{ij}^m variables that do not depend on ω.

Vehicle routing decisions are formulated in more detail later in the section. At this stage, it is sufficient to specify that $\tau(\mathcal{O}', \mathcal{D}', Q', d', n_v)$ denotes the optimum cost of the vehicle routing problem with a particular terminal, set $\mathcal{O}' \subset \mathcal{O}$ of origins, set $\mathcal{D}' \subset \mathcal{D}$ of destinations, quantities to be picked up and delivered given by $Q' \in \mathbb{R}_+^{|\mathcal{O}'|+|\mathcal{D}'|}$ (where for each origin $i \in \mathcal{O}'$, Q_i' denotes the quantity to be picked up at i and brought to the terminal, and for each destination $j \in \mathcal{D}'$, Q_j' denotes the quantity to be taken from the terminal and delivered at j), vehicle movement costs between the terminal and the considered origins and destinations given by $d' \in \mathbb{R}^{(1+|\mathcal{O}'|+|\mathcal{D}'|)^2}$, and n_v vehicles with capacity Q_v each. The arguments of interest of the function τ depend on the decision variables in (2), as follows: For each $m \in \mathcal{X}$ and $z^m(\omega) \in \{0,1\}^{|\mathcal{O}|\times|\mathcal{D}|}$, let

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{O}^m(z^m(\omega)) &:= \left\{ i \in \mathcal{O} \ : \ \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} z_{ij}^m(\omega) > 0 \right\} \\ \mathcal{D}^m(z^m(\omega)) &:= \left\{ j \in \mathcal{D} \ : \ \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} z_{ij}^m(\omega) > 0 \right\} \end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
Q_i^m(z^m(\omega),\omega) &:= \sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}^m(z^m(\omega))} q_{ij}(\omega) z_{ij}^m(\omega) \quad \text{for } i \in \mathcal{O}^m(z^m(\omega)) \\
Q_j^m(z^m(\omega),\omega) &:= \sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}^m(z^m(\omega))} q_{ij}(\omega) z_{ij}^m(\omega) \quad \text{for } j \in \mathcal{D}^m(z^m(\omega)) \\
Q^m(z^m(\omega),\omega) &:= [Q_l^m(z^m(\omega),\omega) \ : \ l \in \mathcal{O}^m(z^m(\omega)) \cup \mathcal{D}^m(z^m(\omega))] \\
d^m(z^m(\omega)) &:= [d_{ij} \ : \ i,j \in \mathcal{O}^m(z^m(\omega)) \cup \mathcal{D}^m(z^m(\omega)) \cup \{m\}] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then the optimization problem of interest is

$$
\min_{u\in\{0,1\}^{|\mathcal{X}|}, n_v \in \mathbb{N}^{|\mathcal{X}|}} \left\{ \sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} (c_m u_m + C_v n_v^m) + \sum_{\omega\in\Omega} p(\omega) V(u, n_v, \omega) \right\} \tag{3}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& V(u, n_v, \omega) \quad := \\
\min_{z(\omega)} \quad & \sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} \tau\left(\mathcal{O}^m(z^m(\omega)), \mathcal{D}^m(z^m(\omega)), Q^m(z^m(\omega),\omega), d^m(z^m(\omega)), n_v^m\right) && (4) \\
\text{subject to} \quad & \sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} z_{ij}^m(\omega) \ = \ \mathbb{I}_{\{q_{ij}(\omega)>0\}} \qquad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}, \ j \in \mathcal{D} && (5) \\
& z_{ij}^m(\omega) \ \leq \ u_m \qquad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}, \ j \in \mathcal{D}, \ m \in \mathcal{X} && (6) \\
& z_{ij}^m(\omega) \ \in \ \{0,1\} \qquad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}, \ j \in \mathcal{D}, \ m \in \mathcal{X} && (7)
\end{aligned}
$$

gives the minimum cost distribution plan for scenario ω given the open terminals specified by u, vehicle fleet sizes specified by n_v, and the origin-destination flows specified by $q(\omega)$.

Note that in the definition of $Q^m(z^m(\omega),\omega)$ above, the quantities that have to be picked up and delivered in a time period in scenario ω are specified by the origin-destination flows $q_{ij}(\omega)$. In practice, in a time period it is typical to deliver goods that were picked up in the previous time period and then to pick up goods and bring them to a terminal to be delivered in the next time period. If the origin-destination flows vary from week-to-week, then the total amount picked up in a particular week may not equal the total amount delivered in the same week. For example, if q is positive every second time period and zero every other period, then in alternating time periods goods will be picked up (but not delivered), and delivered (but not picked up). To capture such behavior accurately, a multistage formulation is needed instead of the two-stage formulation (3)–(7).

The formulation above can accommodate various definitions of the function τ, and thus various types of vehicle routing constraints. Below we give a definition of τ that allows multiple vehicles to visit an origin or a destination during a time period, and that requires deliveries to be completed before any pickups are done on a route. This definition was motivated by the applications described in the introduction. Such a vehicle routing problem is a combination of two problems that have been studied in the literature. The one problem is called the vehicle routing problem with backhauls; see, for example, (41), (3), (63), (65), (66; 67), (57), and (60). The other problem is called the vehicle routing problem with split deliveries (sometimes split pickups); see, for example, (36), (35), (58), (4), and (51). As far as we know, the vehicle routing problem with backhauls and split pickups and deliveries has not been studied in the literature.

Consider a set $\mathcal{O}'$ of origins, set $\mathcal{D}'$ of destinations, quantities to be picked up and delivered given by Q', vehicle movement costs between the considered origins, destinations, and a particular terminal given by d', and n'_v vehicles with capacity Q_v each. Let 0 denote the terminal. Let $\mathcal{V}' := \{0\} \cup \mathcal{O}' \cup \mathcal{D}'$ denote the set of nodes. Because deliveries must be completed before any pickups are done on a route, the feasible arc set on a route is

$$\mathcal{A}' \quad := \quad \left\{(i,j) \in (\mathcal{V}')^2 \setminus \mathcal{O}' \times \mathcal{D}' \;:\; i \neq j\right\}.$$

The decision variables are as follows:

$$v_k \quad := \quad \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if vehicle } k \text{ is in use} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

$$x_{ijk} \quad := \quad \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if vehicle } k \text{ travels on arc } (i,j) \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

$$a_{ik} \geq 0, \text{ the amount of goods picked up at } i \text{ if } i \in \mathcal{O}' \text{ or the amount of goods delivered to } i \text{ if } i \in \mathcal{D}', \text{ by vehicle } k.$$

Then

$$\tau\left(\mathcal{O}', \mathcal{D}', Q', d', n_v'\right) :=$$

$$\min_{x,v,a} \quad \sum_{(i,j)\in\mathcal{A}'} \sum_{k=1}^{n_v'} d_{ij}' x_{ijk} + c_v \sum_{k=1}^{n_v'} v_k \tag{8}$$

$$\text{subject to} \quad \sum_{\{j\,:\,(j,i)\in\mathcal{A}\}} x_{jik} = \sum_{\{j\,:\,(i,j)\in\mathcal{A}\}} x_{ijk} \quad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}' \cup \mathcal{D}',\ k \in \{1,\ldots,n_v'\} \tag{9}$$

$$a_{ik} \leq \left(\sum_{\{j\,:\,(i,j)\in\mathcal{A}\}} x_{ijk}\right) Q_v \quad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}' \cup \mathcal{D}',\ k \in \{1,\ldots,n_v'\} \tag{10}$$

$$\sum_{i\in\mathcal{D}'} a_{ik} \leq Q_v v_k \quad \text{for all } k \in \{1,\ldots,n_v'\} \tag{11}$$

$$\sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}'} a_{ik} \leq Q_v v_k \quad \text{for all } k \in \{1,\ldots,n_v'\} \tag{12}$$

$$\sum_{k=1}^{n_v'} a_{ik} = Q_i' \quad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}' \tag{13}$$

$$\sum_{k=1}^{n_v'} a_{jk} = Q_j' \quad \text{for all } j \in \mathcal{D}' \tag{14}$$

$$\sum_{\{(i,j)\in\mathcal{A}\,:\,i,j\in S\}} x_{ijk} \leq |S| - 1 \quad \text{for all } k \in \{1,\ldots,n_v'\},\ S \subset \mathcal{O}' \text{ or } S \subset \mathcal{D}', |S| \geq 2 \tag{15}$$

$$v_k \in \{0,1\} \quad \text{for all } k \in \{1,\ldots,n_v'\} \tag{16}$$

$$x_{ijk} \in \{0,1\} \quad \text{for all } (i,j) \in \mathcal{A},\ k \in \{1,\ldots,n_v'\} \tag{17}$$

$$a_{ik} \geq 0 \quad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}' \cup \mathcal{D}',\ k \in \{1,\ldots,n_v'\} \tag{18}$$

With τ given by (8)–(18), problem (3)–(7) can be formulated as a two-stage mixed integer linear program, or simply as a large mixed integer linear program. Very small instances of such a problem can be solved with available software. In computational tests, instances with up to 5 origins, 5 destinations, 3 candidate terminals, and a single scenario, could be solved. Most instances with 6 origins, 6 destinations, 3 candidate terminals, and a single scenario, could not be solved — the computer's memory was insufficient to complete the branch-and-bound procedure. Problems in applications have hundreds of origins and destinations, and thus it seems that in the foreseeable future it will be impractical to solve the mixed integer linear program.

Next we describe an approach to problem (3) that seems to be widely used. It is natural to attempt to improve the tractability of problem (3) by simplifying the vehicle routing problem (8)–(18). A popular way to do this is to model freight movements as flows on arcs instead of vehicle routes, and to ignore fixed vehicle costs. The resulting problem is the following two echelon multicommodity (TEMC) location problem (for a deterministic version, see for example (40)). Decision variable u_m is the same as in (1). Decision variable $y_{ij}^m(\omega)$ denotes the quantity of goods flowing from origin i to destination j through terminal m in scenario ω. Then the TEMC location problem is as follows:

$$\min_{u \in \{0,1\}^{|\mathcal{X}|}} \left\{ \sum_{m \in \mathcal{X}} c_m u_m + \sum_{\omega \in \Omega} p(\omega) W(u,\omega) \right\} \tag{19}$$

where

$$\begin{aligned}
W(u,\omega) \quad := \quad & \min_{y(\omega)} \quad \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} \sum_{m \in \mathcal{X}} (d_{im} + d_{mj})\, y_{ij}^m(\omega) && (20)\\
& \text{subject to} \quad \sum_{m \in \mathcal{X}} y_{ij}^m(\omega) = q_{ij}(\omega) \text{ for all } i \in \mathcal{O},\ j \in \mathcal{D} && (21)\\
& \qquad y_{ij}^m(\omega) \leq q_{ij}(\omega) u_m \text{ for all } i \in \mathcal{O},\ j \in \mathcal{D},\ m \in \mathcal{X} && (22)\\
& \qquad y_{ij}^m(\omega) \geq 0 \text{ for all } i \in \mathcal{O},\ j \in \mathcal{D},\ m \in \mathcal{X} && (23)
\end{aligned}$$

Note that, for any $u \in \{0,1\}^{|\mathcal{X}|}$, problem (20)–(23) has an easy solution. For each origin-destination pair $(i,j) \in \mathcal{O} \times \mathcal{D}$, let $m(i,j) := \arg\min_{m \in \mathcal{X}} \{d_{im} + d_{mj} : u_m = 1\}$ denote the cheapest open (given u) terminal to use from origin i to destination j. Then

$$W(u,\omega) \quad = \quad \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} \left(d_{i,m(i,j)} + d_{m(i,j),j}\right) q_{ij}(\omega)$$

Thus

$$\begin{aligned}
\sum_{\omega\in\Omega} p(\omega)W(u,\omega) &= \sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}}\sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}} \left(d_{i,m(i,j)} + d_{m(i,j),j}\right) \sum_{\omega\in\Omega} p(\omega)q_{ij}(\omega) \\
&= \sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}}\sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}} \left(d_{i,m(i,j)} + d_{m(i,j),j}\right) \bar{q}_{ij} \\
&= \min_{\bar{y}} \ \sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}}\sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}}\sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} \left(d_{im} + d_{mj}\right) \bar{y}_{ij}^m \\
&\quad \text{subject to } \sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} \bar{y}_{ij}^m = \bar{q}_{ij} \qquad \text{for all } i\in\mathcal{O},\ j\in\mathcal{D} \\
&\qquad \bar{y}_{ij}^m \le \bar{q}_{ij}u_m \qquad \text{for all } i\in\mathcal{O},\ j\in\mathcal{D},\ m\in\mathcal{X} \\
&\qquad \bar{y}_{ij}^m \ge 0 \qquad \text{for all } i\in\mathcal{O},\ j\in\mathcal{D},\ m\in\mathcal{X}
\end{aligned}$$

where $\bar{q}_{ij} := \sum_{\omega\in\Omega} p(\omega)q_{ij}(\omega)$. Therefore problem (19)–(23) reduces to the following problem:

$$\min_{u,\bar{y}} \quad \left\{ \sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} c_m u_m + \sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}}\sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}}\sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} \left(d_{im} + d_{mj}\right) \bar{y}_{ij}^m \right\} \tag{24}$$

$$\text{subject to} \quad \sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} \bar{y}_{ij}^m = \bar{q}_{ij} \qquad \text{for all } i\in\mathcal{O},\ j\in\mathcal{D} \tag{25}$$

$$\bar{y}_{ij}^m \le \bar{q}_{ij}u_m \qquad \text{for all } i\in\mathcal{O},\ j\in\mathcal{D},\ m\in\mathcal{X} \tag{26}$$

$$\bar{y}_{ij}^m \ge 0 \qquad \text{for all } i\in\mathcal{O},\ j\in\mathcal{D},\ m\in\mathcal{X} \tag{27}$$

$$u_m \in \{0,1\} \qquad \text{for all } m\in\mathcal{X} \tag{28}$$

Formulation (24)–(28) is used in several commercial software packages for distribution network design.

2.4 Qualitative Discussion of Important Factors in Distribution Network Design

Recall the first stage problem (3), which can be rewritten as follows:

$$\begin{aligned}
&\min_{N\in\{1,2,\ldots\}} \ \min_{\{u\in\{0,1\}^{|\mathcal{X}|}\,:\,\sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} u_m = N\}} \ \min_{n_v\in\mathbb{N}^{|\mathcal{X}|}} \left\{ \sum_{m\in\mathcal{X}} (c_m u_m + C_v n_v^m) + \sum_{\omega\in\Omega} p(\omega)V(u,n_v,\omega) \right\} \\
= &\min_{N\in\{1,2,\ldots\}} \ f(N)
\end{aligned} \tag{29}$$

where

$$f(N) \;:=\; \min_{\{u \in \{0,1\}^{|\mathcal{X}|} \,:\, \sum_{m \in \mathcal{X}} u_m = N\}} \; \min_{n_v \in \mathbb{N}^{|\mathcal{X}|}} \left\{ \sum_{m \in \mathcal{X}} (c_m u_m + C_v n_v^m) + \sum_{\omega \in \Omega} p(\omega) V(u, n_v, \omega) \right\} \tag{30}$$

In words, one can first choose the number of terminals, then the locations of the terminals, and then the number of vehicles at each terminal. Of course, when one chooses the number N of terminals, one should take into account how the following optimization problems depend on N. Next we describe an approach for choosing the number N of terminals, approximating how the following optimization problems depend on N.

Suppose that the locations most likely to be chosen for the terminals (typically the locations with smaller values of c_m) have approximately the same fixed costs $c_m \approx c$. Then the first term $\sum_{m \in \mathcal{X}} c_m u_m$ in the objective function f can be replaced with cN. Next, note that the total number $\sum_{m \in \mathcal{X}} n_v^m$ of vehicles needed can be estimated quite accurately with the flow data and the vehicle capacity only, for example, by $\max_{\omega \in \Omega} \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)/Q_v$, so that the total fixed vehicle cost $\sum_{m \in \mathcal{X}} C_v n_v^m$ does not depend much on the chosen number N of terminals. Selection of the optimal number n_v^m of vehicles at each terminal is addressed later. Next, suppose that we approximate the remaining part of the objective function, $\min_{\{u \in \{0,1\}^{|\mathcal{X}|} \,:\, \sum_{m \in \mathcal{X}} u_m = N\}} \min_{n_v \in \mathbb{N}^{|\mathcal{X}|}} \sum_{\omega \in \Omega} p(\omega) V(u, n_v, \omega)$, with $\bar{V}(N) := \sum_{\omega \in \Omega} p(\omega) \hat{V}(N, \omega)$. Then one obtains an approximating problem

$$\min_{N \in \{1,2,\ldots\}} \left\{ \hat{f}(N) \;:=\; cN + \bar{V}(N) \right\} \tag{31}$$

It remains to show how an approximation $\bar{V}(N)$ can be constructed that is both accurate and easy to compute. In the remainder of this section, we make a few observations that guide the development of our CA method regarding (1) the locations of the origins and destinations and the flow rates between them, (2) the importance of terminal location, and (3) the selection of how many terminals serve each origin and each destination.

In most applications, the distribution of origins and destinations is quite different from the uniform distribution. A relevant question is whether approximation of the locations of origins and destinations with a uniform distribution may lead, or is likely to lead, to choosing an incorrect number N of terminals. It is not our purpose to formulate precise questions and give precise answers in this regard; let us just point out that it is easy to construct examples in which approximation of the locations of origins and destinations with a uniform distribution leads to an incorrect number of terminals being selected. Also, in most applications, the origin-destination flow rates vary greatly for different origin-destination pairs. It can also easily be seen that approximating the origin-destination flow rates with a constant rate for all origin-destination pairs may lead to an incorrect number of terminals being selected. We also note that in the applications that motivated this work, data on locations of origins and destinations, and historical flow rates, were easy to obtain. Thus, to select the number of terminals, it is important to take into account the locations of origins and destinations, and the origin-destination flow rates, with more accurate detail than a uniform distribution. For example, suppose that most origins and destinations are located along the east coast and west coast. If most flows are between origin-destination pairs on opposite coasts, then it may be good to have a central terminal, with some vehicles delivering and picking up loads on the east coast, and other vehicles delivering and picking up loads on the west coast, with the loads being exchanged at the central terminal. On the other hand, if most flows are between origin-destination pairs on the same coast, then it may be good to have two terminals, one on the east coast and one on the west coast. A uniform distribution cannot capture the distinction between the two cases above.

Next we address the question of whether it is important to accurately take into account how the terminals will be located when the number N of terminals is chosen.

First, note that a crucial difference between this question and the questions of the previous paragraph is that the locations of the terminals are obviously not known before the number of terminals is chosen, but as already pointed out, often one has data about the locations of origins and destinations, and the flow rates. Also, it is reasonable to expect that, given N, the function $V(u, n_v, \omega)$ will not be very sensitive with respect to the locations u, the intuition being that the optimization in the second stage problem (4)–(7) that defines $V(u, n_v, \omega)$ allows the second stage decisions to adjust to the locations u. Next we describe a crude but simple experiment to illustrate the intuition regarding the effect of terminal location. We took the locations of the origins and destinations as well as the flow rates from the data set for one of the applications that we worked on. The locations of the origins and destinations are shown in Figure 5. The location and flow data are given in the appendix. Given any set of terminal locations, for each origin-destination pair the least great-circle distance from the origin to one of the terminals and from the terminal to the destination can easily be calculated. For each origin-destination pair we calculate the following weighted distance between the origin and destination:

$$\left(\frac{\text{origin-destination flow rate}}{\text{vehicle capacity}}\right) \times \left(\begin{array}{l}\text{least great-circle distance} \\ \text{from origin through a terminal to destination}\end{array}\right).$$

Thus the total weighted distance over all origin-destination pairs can be calculated for any given set of terminal locations. The number N of terminals was varied from 1 to 10. For each number N of terminals, the following procedure was repeated 10,000 times. One terminal was located centrally in a rectangular area covering all the origin and destination locations in our dataset. $N-1$ terminals were located independently and uniformly distributed in the rectangle that contains all origins and destinations. Then the total weighted distance over all origin-destination pairs was calculated as described above. The total cost per time period was equal to the total weighted distance in miles plus $25,000 \times N$ for the terminals. We used 2000 units for the vehicle capacity. Table 2.4 shows the average total cost over the 10,000 replications, and the minimum total cost over the 10,000 replications (approximating the total cost of the best terminal locations) for each number N of terminals. The number of terminals minimizing the average cost is equal to the number of terminals minimizing the minimum cost, namely 4 terminals, which suggests that the optimum number of terminals can be determined quite accurately without optimizing the locations of the terminals.

Figure 5: Origins (circles) and destinations (pluses) for one of the applications.

One further observation regarding terminal location is that in practice there are many factors that play a role in the selection of exact locations of facilities that do not lead to simple models, such as the local transportation infrastructure, availability of individual sites, property prices, taxes, cost of local labor, climate, aesthetics of the location, and other subjective preferences. We agree with (32) that models that "entail a very precise representation of the locations" are "a fixation in pursuit of

Number of Terminal Facilities	Cost		
	Mean	Minimum	Standard Deviation
1	415,201	N/A	N/A
2	407,240	317,864	48,997
3	391,429	305,709	55,679
4	385,652	300,914	53,914
5	389,874	320,991	50,023
6	398,968	342,544	44,989
7	420,964	359,528	47,112
8	438,693	379,866	44,242
9	458,251	401,393	39,517
10	477,503	418,487	36,558

Table 1: The total cost of locating N terminal facilities.

theoretical accuracy that has relatively little practical value". We do not attempt to model factors such as those mentioned above, and therefore we do not address the exact location of terminals. Fortunately, the optimal number of terminals does not seem to be very sensitive with respect to the exact locations to be chosen for the terminals.

We also want to address the effect of the number of terminals that serve each origin and each destination. Recall the one-terminal-nearest-terminal distribution strategy described in Section 2.2. With that strategy, shipments from each origin are taken to the terminal closest to the origin, and from there the shipment is transported to its destination. Thus, with such a strategy, each origin is served by exactly one terminal, and each destination is served by all the terminals. The larger the number of terminals that serves an origin or destination, the larger the number of vehicles that have to stop at the origin or destination per time period. It was shown in (7) that the optimal tour length increases proportionally to the square root of the number of points to be visited on the tour. Therefore, the detour distance for pickups or deliveries increases approximately proportionally to the square root of the number of terminals that serves origins or destinations. At the same time, the larger the number of terminals that serves origins or destinations, the smaller the linehaul portion of the transportation distance between origins and terminals, or terminals and destinations, can be made by careful selection of the terminal to be used to flow goods for each origin-destination pair. Therefore, there is a trade-off between linehaul distance and detour distance as a function of the number of terminals that serves origins and destinations, and we want to capture this trade-off with our approach, instead of fixing a strategy such as the one-terminal-nearest-terminal strategy. Also, it seems reasonable that the larger the total quantity of goods that should be picked up at an origin or delivered to a destination in a time period, the larger the number of terminals that serves that origin or destination should be in the time period. As an extreme example, if the total quantity of goods that should be picked up at an origin in a time period is very small, then only one terminal should serve that origin in that time period, so that only one vehicle has to make a stop at that origin in that time period. It is typical for the total quantity of goods that should be picked up at an origin or delivered to a destination to vary significantly among origins and destinations in the same time period, and also among time periods for the same origin or destination. Figure 6 shows the distribution over origins and destinations of the average total quantity of goods picked up or delivered per week for one of the applications that we worked on. Therefore, we want to allow the number of terminals that serves an origin or destination to be different for different origins and destinations in the same time period, and also different for the same origin or destination in different time periods.

Motivated by the observations above, we construct an approximation $\hat{V}(N, \omega)$ that takes into account detailed data regarding locations of origins and destinations, and the origin-destination flows, that approximate terminal locations with a uniform distribution, and that chooses the number of terminals that serve an origin or destination in a time period based on the total quantity of goods that should be picked up at the origin or delivered to the destination in the time period. Note that this approach is in some sense the opposite of the approach followed in (42), (27), (43),

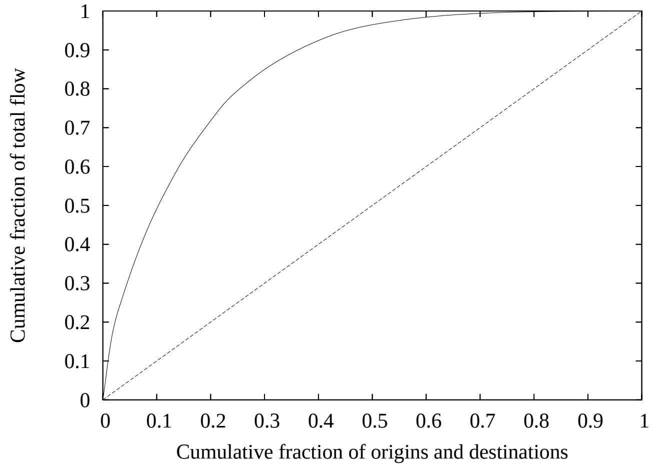


Figure 6: The distribution over origins and destinations of the average total quantity of goods picked up or delivered per week.

(16), and (17), where it was assumed that origins and destinations are uniformly distributed, and origin-destination flows are the same for all origin-destination pairs, and the terminals were carefully located on a rectangular grid. Also note that the purpose of the papers above was to obtain qualitative insight without data, and not to develop a method that can produce good solutions, whereas we want to develop a method that can produce good solutions.

2.5 Continuous Approximation Approach

In this section we describe a CA approach for designing a distribution network in which each shipment moves through one terminal on its way from its origin to its destination. First we provide an overview of the approach in Section 2.5.1. Thereafter we describe the steps of the method.

2.5.1 Overview

It was shown in (29), (4), and (8) that we can make decisions in the following sequence, and that it should be taken into account how each decision will affect the subsequent decisions and objective values. The following decisions are made before the scenario ω (and thus the flow realization $q(\omega)$) is known:

(i) Select the number of terminals.

(ii) Select the location of each terminal.

(iii) Select the number of vehicles at each terminal.

The following decisions are made after the flow realization $q(\omega)$ is known:

(iv) For each origin-destination pair with flow $q_{ij}(\omega) > 0$, determine which terminal will be used to move the shipment from the origin to the destination.

(v) For each terminal, decide how vehicles are routed from the terminal to do the pickups and deliveries of the flows assigned to the terminal in the previous step.

Embarking on this work, we were primarily interested in the first design decision, namely how to select the best number of terminals for a distribution network. However, inspection of (3), (4), and (8), reveals that the design decision (i) should not be made without taking into account design decisions (ii) and (iii), and operational decisions (iv) and (v). It was also argued that taking design decisions (ii) and (iii) and operational decisions (iv) and (v) into account by solving mixed integer programs was impractical, and hopefully unnecessary. Thus a major part of the work is aimed at the development of tractable approximations that take design decisions (ii) and (iii) and operational decisions (iv) and (v) into account, so that design decision (i) can be made relatively easily and well.

We also want to test the quality of the decisions resulting from the developed approximations. To do so, we would like to take the value of design decision (i) resulting from the approximations and that resulting from formulation (24)–(28), for each solve the mixed integer programs that produce decisions (ii)–(v), and then compare the total cost resulting from the two values of design decision (i). The challenge that the mixed integer programs that produce decisions (ii)–(v) are intractable remain, and therefore we developed heuristics to produce decisions (ii)–(v). These heuristics require significantly more computational effort than the approximations developed to make decision (i), but are tractable enough to do the comparison for given values of decision (i). Some of these heuristics may be of interest by themselves.

Section 2.5.2 describes a CA method for selecting the number of terminals. Section 2.5.3 describes how the terminals are located in computational experiments to test the quality of the solutions produced with the CA method. Section 2.5.4 provides a heuristic for determining the vehicle fleet sizes.

2.5.2 Selection of Number of Terminals

The two major cost components considered in the selection of the number of terminals are terminal fixed cost and transportation cost. Terminal fixed cost increases proportionally with the number of terminals. Transportation cost should decrease as the number of terminals increases, because there are more terminals to choose from when routing shipments from their origins to their destinations through terminals. Transportation cost is taken to be proportional to the transportation distance. The transportation distance results from the routes that vehicles travel from each terminal to perform the pickups and deliveries, and is partitioned into two components, namely the linehaul distance and the detour distance. The linehaul distance associated with a route is the distance from the terminal to the center of the points that are visited, and back again. The detour distance is the remaining distance on the route, and is approximately the length of a tour through the points that are visited, excluding the terminal.

As explained in Section 2.4, as the number of terminals that serves each origin or destination increases, the average linehaul distance, or the average distance from the origin of a shipment through the terminal used for the shipment to the destination, decreases, but the total number of stops on vehicle routes increases, and thus the detour distance increases. As also explained in Section 2.4, the larger the total flow from an origin or to a destination, the larger the number of terminals that should serve that origin or destination. We control the number of terminals that serves an origin or a destination as follows. Suppose there are N open terminals. Then we select $N-1$ thresholds, $0 \leq Q_1 \leq \cdots \leq Q_{N-1}$. Consider an origin i and a scenario ω. If $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega) \in (0, Q_1]$, then 1 terminal serves origin i in scenario ω. If $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega) \in (Q_{N-1}, \infty)$, then all N terminals serve origin i in scenario ω. Otherwise, if $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega) \in (Q_{k-1}, Q_k]$, then k terminals serve origin i in scenario ω. The number of terminals that serve each destination in each scenario is determined in the same way. Although the number of terminals that serves an origin or a destination is allowed to depend on the scenario, the thresholds do not depend on the scenario.

Since not all terminals serve each origin and destination, care has to be taken to ensure that for each origin-destination pair (i, j) with $q_{ij}(\omega) > 0$, there is at least one terminal that serves both i and j. We do that by designating one terminal, called the center terminal, to serve all origins and destinations.

An outline of the method for selecting the number of terminals and the thresholds is as follows:

1. A method is developed to approximate total linehaul distance as a function of the number of terminals and the thresholds. This method is described in Section 2.5.2.1.

2. Section 2.5.2.2 describes a method to approximate total detour distance as a function of the number of terminals and the thresholds.

3. The approximations of total linehaul distance and total detour distance as a function of the number of terminals and the thresholds are used to search for the optimal (as measured by the approximations) number of terminals and thresholds. The search method is described in Section 2.5.2.3.

2.5.2.1 Linehaul Distance Estimation

Suppose there are N open terminals, $n = 0, 1, \ldots, N-1$, located in some region that does not have to include the locations of all origins and destinations. The center terminal, used by all origins and destinations, is indexed by 0. This section describes the estimation of the total linehaul distance for given values $Q := (Q_1, \ldots, Q_{N-1})$ of the thresholds.

Consider a scenario $\omega \in \Omega$, and an origin $i \in \mathcal{O}$. Suppose that origin i is served by a set $\mathcal{N}_i$ of N_i terminals, including the center terminal. The selection of the $N_i - 1$ terminals that serve origin i in addition to the center terminal from the set $\{1, 2, \ldots, N-1\}$ of open terminals besides the center terminal is described later. Similarly, consider a destination $j \in \mathcal{D}$, and suppose that destination j is served by a set $\mathcal{N}_j$ of N_j terminals, also including the center terminal. The numbers N_i and N_j depend on the thresholds Q and on the scenario ω, but the dependence is not shown in the notation. Let $\mathcal{N}_{ij} := \mathcal{N}_i \cap \mathcal{N}_j$ denote the set of terminals that serve both origin i and destination j. The sets $\mathcal{N}_i$, $\mathcal{N}_j$, and $\mathcal{N}_{ij}$ depend on the thresholds Q, on the scenario ω, and on the selection of the terminals, but as before the dependence is not shown in the notation.

Let $\lambda_{i,n,j}$ denote the distance from origin i through terminal n to destination j. Distance $\lambda_{i,n,j}$ depends on the locations of the terminals, but the dependence is not shown in the notation. Then the minimum distance from origin i to destination j through a terminal that serves both i and j is given by

$$\Lambda_{i,j} \quad := \quad \min_{n \in \mathcal{N}_{ij}} \lambda_{i,n,j}. \tag{32}$$

Distance $\Lambda_{i,j}$ depends on $\mathcal{N}_{ij}$ and thus on the thresholds Q, on the scenario ω, and on the selection of the terminals; and on distances $\lambda_{i,n,j}$, and thus on the locations of the terminals.

For the given number N of terminals, and the given thresholds Q, the expected total linehaul distance $L(N,Q)$ is then calculated as follows:

$$L(N,Q) \quad := \quad \sum_{\omega\in\Omega} p(\omega) \sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}} \sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}} \frac{q_{ij}(\omega)}{Q_v} \mathbb{E}[\Lambda_{i,j}] \tag{33}$$

where $\mathbb{E}[\Lambda_{i,j}]$ denotes the expected value of $\Lambda_{i,j}$ with respect to random parameters involved in the selection of the terminals.

Next we consider the calculation of $\mathbb{E}[\Lambda_{i,j}]$ in greater detail. Suppose that the locations of the $N-1$ terminals $\{1,2,\ldots,N-1\}$ besides the center terminal are independently and identically distributed in some region. Suppose that the set $\mathcal{N}_i \setminus \{0\}$ of terminals that serve origin i in addition to the center terminal are selected from terminals $1,2,\ldots,N-1$ by making $N_i - 1$ random selections without replacement from $\{1,2,\ldots,N-1\}$, each time selecting each remaining element with equal probability. The set $\mathcal{N}_j \setminus \{0\}$ of $N_j - 1$ terminals that serve destination j in addition to the center terminal are selected in the same way. This selection of terminals is independent for all origins and destinations.

Note that the linehaul distance $\Lambda_{i,j}$ is decreasing in both N_i and N_j, as it should be. Specifically, let $\varpi_i := (\varpi_{i,1},\ldots,\varpi_{i,N-1})$ and $\varpi_j := (\varpi_{j,1},\ldots,\varpi_{j,N-1})$ be two independent and identically distributed random permutations of $\{1,2,\ldots,N-1\}$, with distribution such that each of the $(N-1)!$ permutations has probability $1/(N-1)!$. Consider any $n_i < N$ and $n_j \leq N$. Let $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_i := \{0,\varpi_{i,1},\ldots,\varpi_{i,n_i-1}\}$, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_i^+ := \{0,\varpi_{i,1},\ldots,\varpi_{i,n_i}\}$, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_j := \{0,\varpi_{j,1},\ldots,\varpi_{i,n_j-1}\}$, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_{ij} := \tilde{\mathcal{N}}_i \cap \tilde{\mathcal{N}}_j$, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_{ij}^+ := \tilde{\mathcal{N}}_i^+ \cap \tilde{\mathcal{N}}_j$, $\tilde{\Lambda}_{i,j} := \min_{n\in\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_{ij}} \lambda_{i,n,j}$, and $\tilde{\Lambda}_{i,j}^+ := \min_{n\in\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_{ij}^+} \lambda_{i,n,j}$. Then, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_i$, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_j$, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_{ij}$, and $\tilde{\Lambda}_{i,j}$ have the same distributions as $\mathcal{N}_i$, $\mathcal{N}_j$, $\mathcal{N}_{ij}$, and $\Lambda_{i,j}$ respectively, given that $N_i = n_i$ and $N_j = n_j$. Also, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_i^+$, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_{ij}^+$, and $\tilde{\Lambda}_{i,j}^+$ have the same distributions as $\mathcal{N}_i$, $\mathcal{N}_{ij}$, and $\Lambda_{i,j}$ respectively, given that $N_i = n_i + 1$ and $N_j = n_j$. Note that, w.p.1, $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_i \subset \tilde{\mathcal{N}}_i^+$ and $\tilde{\mathcal{N}}_{ij} \subset \tilde{\mathcal{N}}_{ij}^+$. Thus $\tilde{\Lambda}_{i,j} \geq \tilde{\Lambda}_{i,j}^+$ w.p.1. Hence, the conditional distribution of $\Lambda_{i,j}$ given $N_i = n_i$ is stochastically decreasing in n_i.

Let $\mathcal{N}_{ij}^< := \{n \in \mathcal{N}_{ij} \,:\, \lambda_{i,n,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\}$ denote the set of terminals in $\mathcal{N}_{ij}$ that give a distance from i to j strictly less than the distance from i to j through the center terminal. We calculate $\mathbb{E}[\Lambda_{i,j}]$ by conditioning on $|\mathcal{N}_{ij}|$ and $|\mathcal{N}_{ij}^{<}|$, where for a set S, $|S|$ denotes its cardinality:

$$\mathbb{E}[\Lambda_{i,j}] = \sum_{k=1\vee(N_i+N_j-N)}^{N_i\wedge N_j} \mathbb{P}[|\mathcal{N}_{ij}|=k] \sum_{\ell=0}^{k-1} \mathbb{P}\left[|\mathcal{N}_{ij}^{<}|=\ell \;\middle|\; |\mathcal{N}_{ij}|=k\right] \mathbb{E}\left[\Lambda_{i,j} \;\middle|\; |\mathcal{N}_{ij}|=k, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}^{<}|=\ell\right] \quad (34)$$

(Note that it always holds that $|\mathcal{N}_{ij}| \geq N_i+N_j-N$, irrespective of how $\mathcal{N}_i$ and $\mathcal{N}_j$ are selected.) First, note that since the terminals in $\mathcal{N}_j \setminus \{0\}$ are selected without replacement and with equal probabilities from the terminals $1, 2, \ldots, N-1$, independently of $\mathcal{N}_i$, it follows that the random variable $|\mathcal{N}_{ij}|$ follows a hypergeometric distribution. Specifically, given any set $\mathcal{N}_i$, the conditional probability $\mathbb{P}[|\mathcal{N}_{ij}| = k \,|\, \mathcal{N}_i]$ for any $k \in \{1 \vee (N_i+N_j-N), \ldots, N_i \wedge N_j\}$ satisfies

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}[|\mathcal{N}_{ij}|=k \mid \mathcal{N}_i] &= \frac{\begin{pmatrix} N_i-1 \\ k-1 \end{pmatrix}\begin{pmatrix} N-N_i \\ N_j-k \end{pmatrix}}{\begin{pmatrix} N-1 \\ N_j-1 \end{pmatrix}} \\ &= \frac{(N_i-1)!(N_j-1)!(N-N_i)!(N-N_j)!}{(k-1)!(N_i-k)!(N_j-k)!(N-N_i-N_j+k)!(N-1)!} \end{aligned}$$

(It is the same as the probability of drawing $k-1$ red balls from a jar containing $N-1$ balls, N_i-1 of which are red, in a sample of size N_j-1 drawn without replacement.) Since the right side above is the same for all realizations of $\mathcal{N}_i$, it follows that the probability that exactly $k \in \{1 \vee (N_i+N_j-N), \ldots, N_i \wedge N_j\}$ terminals serve both i and j is

$$\mathbb{P}[|\mathcal{N}_{ij}|=k] = \frac{(N_i-1)!(N_j-1)!(N-N_i)!(N-N_j)!}{(k-1)!(N_i-k)!(N_j-k)!(N-N_i-N_j+k)!(N-1)!}$$

As before, $\mathbb{P}[|\mathcal{N}_{ij}| = k]$ depends on the thresholds Q and the scenario ω. Next, since the locations of terminals $\{1, 2, \ldots, N-1\}$ are independent and identically distributed, and the terminals in $\mathcal{N}_i \setminus \{0\}$ and $\mathcal{N}_j \setminus \{0\}$ are selected independently of the locations of the terminals, it follows that given that $|\mathcal{N}_{ij}| = k$, the number of the $k-1$ terminals n other than the center terminal that have distance $\lambda_{i,n,j}$ strictly less than $\lambda_{i,0,j}$ has a binomial distribution. Specifically, for $\ell \in \{0, 1, \ldots, k-1\}$,

$$\mathbb{P}\left[|\mathcal{N}_{ij}^{<}| = \ell \,\middle|\, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}| = k\right] = \begin{pmatrix} k-1 \\ \ell \end{pmatrix} \mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}]^{\ell} \mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} \geq \lambda_{i,0,j}]^{k-1-\ell}$$

Since $\Lambda_{i,j}$ is a nonnegative random variable, it holds for $\ell \in \{0, 1, \ldots, k-1\}$ that

$$\begin{aligned}
&\mathbb{E}\left[\Lambda_{i,j} \,\middle|\, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}| = k, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}^{<}| = \ell\right] \\
&= \int_0^\infty \mathbb{P}\left[\Lambda_{i,j} > \alpha \,\middle|\, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}| = k, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}^{<}| = \ell\right] d\alpha \\
&= \int_0^\infty \mathbb{P}\left[\min_{n \in \mathcal{N}_{ij}} \lambda_{i,n,j} > \alpha \,\middle|\, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}| = k, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}^{<}| = \ell\right] d\alpha \\
&= \int_0^{\lambda_{i,0,j}} \mathbb{P}\left[\min\{\lambda_{i,1,j}, \ldots, \lambda_{i,\ell,j}\} > \alpha \,\middle|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}, \ldots, \lambda_{i,\ell,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] d\alpha \\
&= \int_0^{\lambda_{i,0,j}} \mathbb{P}\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha, \ldots, \lambda_{i,\ell,j} > \alpha \,\middle|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}, \ldots, \lambda_{i,\ell,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] d\alpha \\
&= \int_0^{\lambda_{i,0,j}} \mathbb{P}\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,\middle|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right]^{\ell} d\alpha
\end{aligned}$$

The third and fifth equalities follow from terminals $\{1, 2, \ldots, N-1\}$ being independent and identically distributed, and the terminals in $\mathcal{N}_i \setminus \{0\}$ and $\mathcal{N}_j \setminus \{0\}$ being selected independently of the locations of the terminals. As a special case, note that it holds for $\ell = 0$ that

$$\mathbb{E}\left[\Lambda_{i,j} \,\middle|\, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}| = k, |\mathcal{N}_{ij}^{<}| = 0\right] = \lambda_{i,0,j}$$

In summary, it follows from (34) that

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E}[\Lambda_{i,j}] = \sum_{k=1 \vee (N_i + N_j - N)}^{N_i \wedge N_j} & \frac{(N_i - 1)!(N_j - 1)!(N - N_i)!(N - N_j)!}{(N_i - k)!(N_j - k)!(N - N_i - N_j + k)!(N-1)!} \\
& \times \sum_{\ell=0}^{k-1} \frac{1}{\ell!(k-1-\ell)!} \mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}]^{\ell} \mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} \geq \lambda_{i,0,j}]^{k-1-\ell} \\
& \times \int_0^{\lambda_{i,0,j}} \mathbb{P}\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,\middle|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right]^{\ell} d\alpha
\end{aligned} \tag{35}$$

It remains to explain how $\mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}]$ and $\mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}]$ for $\alpha \in (0, \lambda_{i,0,j})$ can be computed. We provide the details of these calculations in the appendix, where it is shown that if the terminals $\{1, 2, \ldots, N-1\}$ are uniformly distributed in a rectangular region, and distance $\lambda_{i,1,j}$ is given by the L_1-metric, then $\mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}]$ is a piecewise polynomial in α of degree at most two, and thus

$$\int_0^{\lambda_{i,0,j}} \mathbb{P}\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,\middle|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right]^\ell d\alpha$$

is conceptually simple. Thus, for a given number N of terminals, and given thresholds Q, the expected total linehaul distance $L(N, Q)$ can be calculated quite easily using (33).

2.5.2.2 Detour Distance Estimation

(7) established the following result that is widely used in the CA literature. Consider an independent sequence of uniformly distributed points in a set $A \subset \mathbb{R}^k$ with Lebesque measure $\mu(A) > 0$. Let T^n denote the shortest tour length, as measured by the L_2 Euclidean distance, through the first n points in the sequence. Then there exists a constant β_k, independent of the sequence and of A, such that with probability 1, $\lim_{n\to\infty} n^{-(k-1)/k} T^n = \beta_k k^{1/2} [\mu(A)]^{1/k}$. Specifically, for $\mathbb{R}^2$, there exists a constant $\beta_2 \in [0.44, 0.65]$ (the exact value is not yet known), such that with probability 1, $\lim_{n\to\infty} n^{-1/2} T^n = \beta_2 2^{1/2} [\mu(A)]^{1/2}$. The approximation $T^n \approx \beta\sqrt{n\mu(A)}$, for some β depending on the distance metric, has been used in many vehicle routing applications, and in this section we do the same for the purpose of obtaining a tractable approximation of the detour distance as a function of the number N of terminals and the thresholds Q.

Consider a given number N of terminals, given values $Q := (Q_1, \ldots, Q_{N-1})$ of the thresholds, and a given scenario $\omega \in \Omega$. Assume that the vehicles are fully loaded with goods to be delivered when departing from a terminal and fully loaded with goods that were picked up when arriving back at the terminal (one can multiply vehicle capacity Q_v with a factor between 0 and 1 to compensate for vehicles not being fully loaded on average). Then the total number of vehicle routes is equal to $\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)/Q_v$. Let the total region be denoted by $\bar{A}$ with area $\mu(\bar{A})$. Suppose that each terminal serves origins and/or destinations in most of $\bar{A}$ (this is the case even for distribution strategies such as one-terminal-nearest-terminal described in Section 2.2). The average number of vehicle routes per terminal is equal to $\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)/(NQ_v)$. Thus, if different vehicle routes from the same terminal do not overlap, then the average area served per vehicle route is equal to

$$\mu(A) \quad = \quad \frac{\mu(\bar{A}) N Q_v}{\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)}$$

Note that $\mu(A)$ depends on N and ω, but the notation does not indicate the dependence.

Next we calculate the average number of delivery stops and the average number of pickup stops on a vehicle route, as a function of N, Q, and ω. The number of vehicle stops at an origin $i \in \mathcal{O}$ is at least $\max\left\{N_i, \lceil \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)/Q_v \rceil\right\}$, and the number of vehicle stops at a destination $j \in \mathcal{D}$ is at least $\max\{N_j, \lceil \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} q_{ij}(\omega)/Q_v \rceil\}$ (recall that N_i and N_j depend on N, Q, and ω). Thus, the average number of pickup stops per vehicle route is approximately

$$n_p \quad = \quad \frac{\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \max\left\{N_i, \lceil \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)/Q_v \rceil\right\}}{\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)/Q_v}$$

and the average number of delivery stops per vehicle route is approximately

$$n_d \quad = \quad \frac{\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} \max\{N_j, \lceil \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} q_{ij}(\omega)/Q_v \rceil\}}{\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)/Q_v}$$

Then, the approximate expected total detour distance $D(N, Q)$ is calculated as follows:

$$D(N,Q) \quad := \quad \sum_{\omega \in \Omega} p(\omega) \frac{\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)}{Q_v} \, \beta \left[\sqrt{(n_p - 1)\mu(A)} + \sqrt{(n_d - 1)\mu(A)} + \sqrt{\mu(A)}\right]$$

The approximation is obtained by substituting expressions for the average number of stops and the average area of the region served into the tour length approximation $T^n \approx \beta\sqrt{n\mu(A)}$. The reason $n_p - 1$ and $n_d - 1$ are used in the tour length calculations is because the vehicle does not have to return to the first pickup point or the first delivery point after completing pickups or deliveries. The term $\beta\sqrt{\mu(A)}$ approximates the average distance from the last delivery point to the first pickup point on a vehicle route. Since $\sqrt{x}$ is a concave function, it follows from Jensen's inequality that this overestimates the average tour length. In numerical experiments, this overestimation did not seem to have much of an effect on the selection of the optimal number of terminals. In practice, such overestimation is likely to be dominated by the amount by which actual route lengths on road networks differ from the lengths according to simple metrics.

Note that n_p is increasing in the numbers N_i of terminals serving origins i, n_d is increasing in the numbers N_j of terminals serving destinations j, and $D(N, Q)$ is increasing in n_p and n_d. Also, the average area served per vehicle route $\mu(A)$ is increasing in the number N of terminals, and $D(N, Q)$ is increasing in $\mu(A)$. Thus the expected total detour distance $D(N, Q)$ is increasing in the number N of terminals and in the numbers of terminals serving origins and destinations, as it should be.

2.5.2.3 Search for Number of Terminals and Thresholds

Recall that we want to construct and solve an approximating problem (31):

$$\min_{N \in \{1,2,\ldots\}} \left\{ \hat{f}(N) \ := \ cN + \bar{V}(N) \right\}$$

taking into account the terminal fixed cost cN and the approximate expected transportation cost $\bar{V}(N)$. Without loss of generality, suppose that the unit of cost or the unit of distance has been scaled to make transportation cost per distance equal to 1. The approximate expected transportation cost $\bar{V}(N)$ is given by minimizing the sum of the linehaul cost and the detour cost over the thresholds:

$$\bar{V}(N) \quad := \quad \min_{0 \leq Q_1 \leq \cdots \leq Q_{N-1}} \{L(N,Q) + D(N,Q)\} \tag{36}$$

Note that the larger the value of N, the larger the set of thresholds that can be selected, and thus the smaller the value of $\bar{V}(N)$.

Note that if the total flows $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega)$ for all $i \in \mathcal{O}$ and $\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}} q_{ij}(\omega)$ for all $j \in \mathcal{D}$ are sorted, then all values of a threshold Q_k between two successive sorted values of the total flow give the same values of $L(N,Q)$ and $D(N,Q)$. Thus, if N is small, say $N \leq 4$, then problem (36) can easily be solved by enumerating all relevant values of the $N-1$ thresholds. If N is large, then problem (36) can be solved approximately by a neighborhood search on the set of relevant values of the $N-1$ thresholds. In addition, if a threshold Q_k is changed from one interval in the sorted list of total flows to a neighboring interval, the resulting change in the values of $L(N,Q)$ and $D(N,Q)$ can be computed very quickly, because the value of N_i or N_j for only one origin i or destination j is affected by the change.

Finally, problem $\min_{N \in \{1,2,\ldots\}} \left\{cN + \bar{V}(N)\right\}$ can be solved by enumerating a range of reasonable values of N. The optimal value N^* is the number of terminals obtained with the CA method described above.

2.5.3 Terminal Location

Recall from Section 2.4 that it is not our purpose to model all the factors that should enter or do enter into the location of terminals. It is our purpose to test the CA method for selection of the number of terminals described in Section 2.5.2 by more detailed calculation of transportation costs. To facilitate such detailed calculation of vehicle routing costs, we need to calculate locations for the chosen number N of terminals. For that purpose, we choose a set $\mathcal{X}$ of candidate locations, and solve the following problem:

$$
\begin{array}{llll}
\min\limits_{u,\bar{y}} & \multicolumn{3}{l}{\left\{ \sum\limits_{m\in\mathcal{X}} c_m u_m + \sum\limits_{i\in\mathcal{O}} \sum\limits_{j\in\mathcal{D}} \sum\limits_{m\in\mathcal{X}} \left(d_{im} + d_{mj}\right) \bar{y}_{ij}^m \right\}} \\
\text{subject to} & \sum\limits_{m\in\mathcal{X}} \bar{y}_{ij}^m = \bar{q}_{ij} & & \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O},\ j \in \mathcal{D} \\
& \bar{y}_{ij}^m \leq \bar{q}_{ij} u_m & & \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O},\ j \in \mathcal{D},\ m \in \mathcal{X} \\
& \sum\limits_{m\in\mathcal{X}} u_m = N & & \\
& \bar{y}_{ij}^m \geq 0 & & \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O},\ j \in \mathcal{D},\ m \in \mathcal{X} \\
& u_m \in \{0,1\} & & \text{for all } m \in \mathcal{X}
\end{array}
$$

2.5.4 Choosing the Vehicle Fleet Sizes

The final design decision required to test the CA method for selection of the number of terminals described in Section 2.5.2 is to choose the number of vehicles stationed at each terminal. Our approach is simple enumeration, using the operational decision procedures described in Section 2.6. First, for every scenario ω, we assign values to the decision variables $z_{ij}(\omega)$ that satisfy constraints (5)–(7), and such that the number of terminals that serve each origin i or destination j does not exceed the numbers N_i or N_j obtained from the thresholds Q and the flows $q(\omega)$ as described in Section 2.5.2. To do this, we use a simple heuristic described in Section 2.6.1. A lower bound on the number of vehicles required at each open terminal m is then given by

$$
L_m \quad := \quad \max_{\omega\in\Omega} \left\lceil \frac{\sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}} \sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}} z_{ij}^m(\omega) q_{ij}(\omega)}{Q_v} \right\rceil .
$$

We use the detailed routing cost calculations described in Section 2.6.2 to calculate the cost of routing $L_m, L_m + 1, L_m + 2, \ldots, L_m + k$ vehicles from terminal m for some small number k. We then choose the number of vehicles for terminal m that minimizes the sum of vehicle cost and transportation cost from terminal m over the $k + 1$ fleet sizes. For each fleet size, the detailed vehicle routing cost calculations for all scenarios described in Section 2.6.2 take a large amount of time. Therefore, as described in Section 2.5.2, the CA is based on an assumption of full vehicles, unlike the more detailed choice of vehicle fleet sizes described in this section.

2.6 Operational Decisions

Section 2.5 described how to make the design decisions, namely selection of the number of terminals, location of the terminals, and choice of the vehicle fleet sizes. In the process thresholds were also selected that control how many terminals serve an origin or destination, depending on the total flow from/to the origin/destination. In this section we describe methods for making operational decisions. Specifically, Section 2.6.1 describes a method for selecting which terminal to use for each origin-destination flow, and Section 2.6.2 describes a method for routing the vehicles from each terminal to do the pickups and deliveries.

2.6.1 Selection of Terminal for Each Origin-Destination Flow

This section describes how to decide through which terminal to route each origin-destination flow for a given set of flows $q(\omega)$. Ideally, for given open terminals u, vehicle fleet sizes n_v, and origin-destination flows $q(\omega)$, one would like to solve the integer linear program (4)–(7). However, solving (4)–(7) exactly does not seem to be practical. In this section, we describe a heuristic for choosing the decision variables $z(\omega)$ that specify through which terminal each origin-destination flow is routed. The heuristic does not require knowledge of the vehicle fleet sizes n_v, but does require knowledge of the thresholds Q.

Let $\mathcal{N}_i(k)$ and $\mathcal{N}_j(k)$ represent the sets of terminals serving origin i and destination j respectively at the kth iteration of the algorithm. We require that $|\mathcal{N}_i(k)| \leq N_i$, $|\mathcal{N}_j(k)| \leq N_j$, and $\mathcal{N}_i(k) \subset \mathcal{U}$, $\mathcal{N}_j(k) \subset \mathcal{U}$, where $\mathcal{U} := \{m \in \mathcal{X} : u_m = 1\}$ denotes the set of open terminals. (Recall from Section 2.5.2 how the thresholds Q and the origin-destination flows $q(\omega)$ are used to determine the maximum numbers N_i and N_j of terminals serving origin i and destination j respectively.) For each origin $i \in \mathcal{O}$, destination $j \in \mathcal{D}$, and set $\mathcal{N} \subset \mathcal{U}$, let

$$m(i,j,\mathcal{N}) \in \arg\min_{m \in \mathcal{N}} \{d_{im} + d_{mj}\}$$

denote a terminal from the set $\mathcal{N}$ that minimizes the distance from the origin i through a terminal in the set $\mathcal{N}$ to the destination j.

Algorithm to Select Terminal for Each Origin-Destination Flow:

(0) Initially, every origin and destination is served by only the center terminal, so that

$$\mathcal{N}_i(0) = \mathcal{N}_j(0) := \{0\} \text{ for all } i \in \mathcal{O} \text{ and } j \in \mathcal{D}.$$

(1) For each $i \in \mathcal{O}$ and $j \in \mathcal{D}$,

(a) If $|\mathcal{N}_i(k)| < N_i$ and $|\mathcal{N}_j(k)| < N_j$, then set

$$\mathcal{N}_i^+(k) := \mathcal{N}_i(k) \cup m(i,j,\mathcal{U}) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{N}_j^+(k) := \mathcal{N}_j(k) \cup m(i,j,\mathcal{U});$$

(b) Else if $|\mathcal{N}_i(k)| < N_i$ and $|\mathcal{N}_j(k)| = N_j$, then set

$$\mathcal{N}_i^+(k) := \mathcal{N}_i(k) \cup m(i,j,\mathcal{N}_j(k)) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{N}_j^+(k) := \mathcal{N}_j(k);$$

(c) Else if $|\mathcal{N}_i(k)| = N_i$ and $|\mathcal{N}_j(k)| < N_j$, set

$$\mathcal{N}_i^+(k) := \mathcal{N}_i(k) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{N}_j^+(k) := \mathcal{N}_j(k) \cup m(i,j,\mathcal{N}_i(k));$$

(d) Else $|\mathcal{N}_i(k)| = N_i$ and $|\mathcal{N}_j(k)| = N_j$. Set

$$\mathcal{N}_i^+(k) := \mathcal{N}_i(k) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{N}_j^+(k) := \mathcal{N}_j(k).$$

(Note that $|\mathcal{N}_i^+(k)| \leq N_i$ and $|\mathcal{N}_j^+(k)| \leq N_j$ for all $i \in \mathcal{O}$ and $j \in \mathcal{D}$.) If

$$\mathcal{N}_i^+(k) = \mathcal{N}_i(k) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{N}_j^+(k) = \mathcal{N}_j(k)$$

for all $i \in \mathcal{O}$ and $j \in \mathcal{D}$, then terminate the algorithm.

(2) Choose

$$(i', j')(k) \;\in\; \arg\max_{i\in\mathcal{O}, j\in\mathcal{D}} q_{ij}(\omega) \left[\min_{m\in\mathcal{N}_i(k)\cap\mathcal{N}_j(k)} (d_{im}+d_{mj}) - \min_{m\in\mathcal{N}_i^+(k)\cap\mathcal{N}_j^+(k)} (d_{im}+d_{mj}) \right].$$

Set

$$\mathcal{N}_{i'}(k+1) \;:=\; \mathcal{N}_{i'}^+(k) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{N}_{j'}(k+1) \;:=\; \mathcal{N}_{j'}^+(k).$$

For all $i \in \mathcal{O} \setminus \{i'\}$ and $j \in \mathcal{D} \setminus \{j'\}$, set

$$\mathcal{N}_i(k+1) \;:=\; \mathcal{N}_i(k) \quad \text{and} \quad \mathcal{N}_j(k+1) \;:=\; \mathcal{N}_j(k).$$

Return to step 1.

At the completion of the algorithm at finite iteration $k^\star$, let

$$z_{ij}^m(\omega) \;=\; \mathbb{I}_{\{m=m(i,j,\mathcal{N}_i(k^\star)\cap\mathcal{N}_j(k^\star))\}}.$$

2.6.2 Vehicle Routing with Backhauls, Split Pickups and Deliveries

In this section we describe a method for routing the vehicles from each terminal to do given pickups and deliveries. The vehicle routes also provide a more accurate estimate of the transportation cost resulting from a given network design. The method described in this section is also, as far as we know, the first heuristic proposed for the vehicle routing problem with backhauls and split pickups and deliveries, and thus may be of interest in itself.

The vehicle routing problem with backhauls and split pickups and deliveries (VRPBS) was given in (8)–(18). Recall that the problem input is a terminal indexed by 0, a set $\mathcal{O}'$ of origins, a set $\mathcal{D}'$ of destinations, quantities to be picked up and delivered given by Q', vehicle movement costs between the origins, destinations, and the considered terminal given by d', and n_v' vehicles with capacity Q_v each. Note that the origin-destination flows $q(\omega)$ and the output of the methods described in the previous sections provide the input for the vehicle routing problem, except for the fleet size n_v', which can be determined by enumeration, as described in Section 2.5.4.

We describe a cluster-first, route-second heuristic for the VRPBS that uses various ideas of the heuristic for the vehicle routing problem with backhauls (VRPB) proposed by (67). In both the VRPB and the VRPBS, deliveries have to be performed before pickups on the same route. The heuristic of (67) has to be modified for the following reasons. First, as already pointed out, in the VRPBS multiple vehicles are allowed to visit each origin and destination, whereas in the VRPB exactly one vehicle must visit each origin and destination. One reason this modification is needed is because it often holds that $Q'_i > Q_v$ for some origins or destinations $i \in \mathcal{O}' \cup \mathcal{D}'$, and thus some origins and destinations must be visited by more than one vehicle (recall the typical nonuniform distribution of pickup and delivery quantities shown in Figure 6). Second, in the VRPB considered by (67), each of the n'_v vehicles must visit at least one destination, and thus no vehicle may travel directly from the terminal to an origin. In the VRPBS, fewer than n'_v vehicles may visit origins or destinations, and vehicles may travel directly to origins (and thus not visit any destinations).

2.6.2.1 Initial Splitting Step

As pointed out, for some points $i \in \mathcal{O}' \cup \mathcal{D}'$, it may hold that $Q'_i > Q_v$. If point i has quantity $Q'_i > Q_v$, then it should be served by multiple vehicles, and all these vehicles except possibly one should carry a full load associated with this point, and the remaining quantity should be carried by another vehicle which can combine the remaining quantity with additional loads associated with other points. For example, if a destination j has $Q'_j = 3.5Q_v$, then each of 3 vehicles should deliver full vehicle loads to j and afterward move to pick-up points, and one vehicle should deliver a load of size $0.5Q_v$ to j and the rest of the vehicle's space could be used for other deliveries on its route. Thus, in the first step each point i and its quantity Q'_i is split, after which each new point i' has quantity $Q''_{i'} \leq Q_v$. Specifically, for each point $i \in \mathcal{O}' \cup \mathcal{D}'$, create $\lceil Q'_i/Q_v \rceil$ copies of point i, of which $\lfloor Q'_i/Q_v \rfloor$ new points

i' have quantity $Q''_{i'} = Q_v$, and if $\lfloor Q'_i/Q_v \rfloor < \lceil Q'_i/Q_v \rceil$, then the remaining point i' has quantity $Q''_{i'} = Q'_i - \lfloor Q'_i/Q_v \rfloor Q_v$. Let $\mathcal{O}''$ denote the set of new origins, $\mathcal{D}''$ denote the set of new destinations, $\mathcal{V}'' := \{0\} \cup \mathcal{O}'' \cup \mathcal{D}''$ denote the new set of nodes, $\mathcal{A}'' := \{(i,j) \in (\mathcal{V}'')^2 \setminus \mathcal{O}'' \times \mathcal{D}'' \ : \ i \neq j\}$ denote the new set of arcs, and Q''_i and Q''_j denote the new quantities to be picked up and delivered. For $(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}''$, the vehicle movement costs $d''_{i,j}$ are obtained from the given vehicle movement costs d in the obvious way, except if i and j correspond to the same original point, in which case $d''_{i,j} := \varepsilon$ for some chosen $\varepsilon > 0$.

Next one can define the following VRPB with input data $\mathcal{O}''$, $\mathcal{D}''$, $\mathcal{V}''$, $\mathcal{A}''$, Q'', d'', n'_v, and Q_v. The decision variables are

$$
\begin{aligned}
x_{ij} \quad &:= \quad \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if a vehicle travels on arc } (i,j) \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases} \\
n_v^O \quad &:= \quad \text{number of vehicles performing pickups} \\
n_v^D \quad &:= \quad \text{number of vehicles performing deliveries}
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that the number of vehicles used is given by $\max\{n_v^O, n_v^D\}$. For each set $S \subset \mathcal{O}''$ or $S \subset \mathcal{D}''$, let $\sigma(S)$ denote the minimum number of vehicles needed to serve each point in S if exactly one vehicle must visit each point, that is, $\sigma(S)$ is the optimal value of the bin packing problem with item sizes given by Q''_i for $i \in S$ and bin size Q_v. For each combination of $n_v^O \in \left\{\left\lceil \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}''} Q''_i/Q_v \right\rceil, \ldots, n'_v\right\}$ and $n_v^D \in \left\{\left\lceil \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} Q''_j/Q_v \right\rceil, \ldots, n'_v\right\}$, let

$$\tau'\left(\mathcal{O}'', \mathcal{D}'', Q'', d'', n_v^O, n_v^D\right) \quad :=$$

$$\min_x \quad \sum_{(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}''} d''_{ij} x_{ij} \tag{37}$$

$$\text{subject to} \quad \sum_{\{j \,:\, (j,i) \in \mathcal{A}''\}} x_{ji} \quad = \quad 1 \qquad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}'' \cup \mathcal{D}'' \tag{38}$$

$$\sum_{\{j \,:\, (i,j) \in \mathcal{A}''\}} x_{ij} \quad = \quad 1 \qquad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}'' \cup \mathcal{D}'' \tag{39}$$

$$\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}''} x_{i0} \quad = \quad n_v^O \tag{40}$$

$$\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}''} x_{0i} = \max\{0, n_v^O - n_v^D\} \tag{41}$$

$$\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{0j} = n_v^D \tag{42}$$

$$\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{j0} = \max\{0, n_v^D - n_v^O\} \tag{43}$$

$$\sum_{\{(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}'' \,:\, i \in S, j \notin S\}} x_{ij} \geq \sigma(S) \quad \text{for all } S \subset \mathcal{O}'',\ |S| \geq 2 \tag{44}$$

$$\sum_{\{(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}'' \,:\, i \notin S, j \in S\}} x_{ij} \geq \sigma(S) \quad \text{for all } S \subset \mathcal{D}'',\ |S| \geq 2 \tag{45}$$

$$x_{ij} \in \{0,1\} \quad \text{for all } (i,j) \in \mathcal{A}'' \tag{46}$$

denote the optimal value of the VRPB given that exactly n_v^O vehicles serve the origins $\mathcal{O}''$ and exactly n_v^D vehicles serve the destinations $\mathcal{D}''$. If n_v^O or n_v^D is too small so that (38)–(46) is infeasible, then $\tau''\left(\mathcal{O}'', \mathcal{D}'', Q'', d'', n_v^O, n_v^D\right) := \infty$. Then the VRPB is given by

$$\begin{aligned}
\tau''\left(\mathcal{O}'', \mathcal{D}'', Q'', d'', n_v'\right) \quad := \quad & \min_{n_v^O, n_v^D} \quad \left\{c_v \max\{n_v^O, n_v^D\} + \tau'\left(\mathcal{O}'', \mathcal{D}'', Q'', d'', n_v^O, n_v^D\right)\right\} \\
& \text{subject to} \quad n_v^O \in \left\{\left\lceil \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}''} Q_i''/Q_v \right\rceil, \ldots, n_v'\right\} \\
& \qquad\qquad\quad\ n_v^D \in \left\{\left\lceil \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} Q_j''/Q_v \right\rceil, \ldots, n_v'\right\}
\end{aligned}$$

2.6.2.2 *Initial Clustering Step*

Note that, for any $i \in \mathcal{O}''$, if $Q_i'' = Q_v$, then (38)–(46) imply that i is visited by exactly one vehicle that does not visit any other origin. Similarly, for any $j \in \mathcal{D}''$, if $Q_j'' = Q_v$, then j is visited by exactly one vehicle that does not visit any other destination. Let $\tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' := \{i \in \mathcal{O}'' : Q_i'' = Q_v\}$ and $\tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' := \{j \in \mathcal{D}'' : Q_j'' = Q_v\}$. Then for all $i \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$, (38) can be replaced by

$$x_{0i} + \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{ji} = 1 \tag{47}$$

$$x_{ji} = 0 \quad \text{for all } j \in \mathcal{O}'' \tag{48}$$

and for all $j \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$, (38) can be replaced by

$$x_{0j} = 1 \tag{49}$$

$$x_{ij} = 0 \qquad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{D}'' \tag{50}$$

Also, for all $i \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$, (39) can be replaced by

$$x_{i0} = 1 \tag{51}$$

$$x_{ij} = 0 \qquad \text{for all } j \in \mathcal{O}'' \tag{52}$$

and for all $j \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$, (39) can be replaced by

$$x_{j0} + \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}''} x_{ji} = 1 \tag{53}$$

$$x_{ji} = 0 \qquad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{D}'' \tag{54}$$

Note that, given (51), constraint (40) holds if and only if $\sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''} x_{i0} = n_v^O - |\tilde{\mathcal{O}}''|$. If $\mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \neq \varnothing$, then it follows from $n_v^O \geq \left\lceil \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}''} Q_i''/Q_v \right\rceil$ that $n_v^O - |\tilde{\mathcal{O}}''| \geq \left\lceil \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''} Q_i''/Q_v \right\rceil \geq 1$. Similarly, given (49), constraint (42) holds if and only if $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''} x_{0j} = n_v^D - |\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''|$, and if $\mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \neq \varnothing$, then it follows that $n_v^D - |\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''| \geq \left\lceil \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''} Q_j''/Q_v \right\rceil \geq 1$. Also note that constraints (47) and (51) imply that constraint (44) holds for all $S \subset \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$. Similarly, constraints (49) and (53) imply that constraint (45) holds for all $S \subset \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$. Furthermore, constraints (48) and (52) imply that constraint (44) is required only for $S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$, and not for $S \subset \mathcal{O}''$ such that $S \cap \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \neq \varnothing$ and $S \cap (\mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'') \neq \varnothing$. Similarly, constraints (50) and (54) imply that constraint (45) is required only for $S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$, and not for $S \subset \mathcal{D}''$ such that $S \cap \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \neq \varnothing$ and $S \cap (\mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'') \neq \varnothing$.

Note that it follows from constraints (38)–(43) that $\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}''} x_{ji} = \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} \sum_{i \notin \mathcal{D}''} x_{ji} - \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{j0} = \sum_{i \notin \mathcal{D}''} \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{ij} - \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{j0} = \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{0j} - \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{j0} = n_v^D - \max\{0, n_v^D - n_v^O\} = \min\{n_v^O, n_v^D\}$. Thus we can add the following redundant constraint:

$$\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}''} x_{ji} = \min\{n_v^O, n_v^D\} \tag{55}$$

Next, we add the following redundant constraints that follow from constraints (38) and (39) respectively:

$$x_{0i} + \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{ji} \leq 1 \qquad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \tag{56}$$

$$x_{j0} + \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}''} x_{ji} \leq 1 \qquad \text{for all } j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \tag{57}$$

Also, we add the following redundant constraints that follow from constraints (44) and (45) respectively:

$$\sum_{\{(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}'' \,:\, i \in S, j \notin S\}} x_{ij} \geq 1 \qquad \text{for all } S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'', |S| \geq 2 \tag{58}$$

$$\sum_{\{(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}'' \,:\, i \notin S, j \in S\}} x_{ij} \geq 1 \qquad \text{for all } S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'', |S| \geq 2 \tag{59}$$

Next we formulate a Lagrangian relaxation for problem (37)–(59). Let the multipliers associated with constraint (38) for $i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$ and associated with constraint (39) for $i \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$ be denoted by λ_i, and let the multipliers associated with constraint (44) for $S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$ and associated with constraint (45) for $S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$ be denoted by $\mu_S \geq 0$. Then the corresponding Lagrangian relaxation is as follows:

$$\begin{aligned}
& L\left(\mathcal{O}'', \mathcal{D}'', Q'', d'', n_v^O, n_v^D, \lambda, \mu\right) := \\
\min_x \quad & \sum_{(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}''} d''_{ij} x_{ij} + \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''} \lambda_i \left(\sum_{\{j \,:\, (j,i) \in \mathcal{A}''\}} x_{ji} - 1 \right) \\
& + \sum_{i \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''} \lambda_i \left(\sum_{\{j \,:\, (i,j) \in \mathcal{A}''\}} x_{ij} - 1 \right) \\
& + \sum_{S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''} \mu_S \left(\sigma(S) - \sum_{\{(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}'' \,:\, i \in S, j \notin S\}} x_{ij} \right) \\
& + \sum_{S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''} \mu_S \left(\sigma(S) - \sum_{\{(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}'' \,:\, i \notin S, j \in S\}} x_{ij} \right) && (60) \\
\text{subject to} \quad & x_{0i} + \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{ji} = 1 \qquad \text{for all } i \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' && (61) \\
& x_{0i} + \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}''} x_{ji} \leq 1 \qquad \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' && (62)
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
x_{ij} &= 0 && \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}'',\ j \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' && (63)\\
x_{0j} &= 1 && \text{for all } j \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' && (64)\\
x_{ij} &= 0 && \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{D}'',\ j \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' && (65)\\
\sum_{\{i\,:\,(i,j)\in\mathcal{A}''\}} x_{ij} &= 1 && \text{for all } j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' && (66)\\
x_{i0} &= 1 && \text{for all } i \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' && (67)\\
x_{ij} &= 0 && \text{for all } i \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'',\ j \in \mathcal{O}'' && (68)\\
\sum_{\{j\,:\,(i,j)\in\mathcal{A}''\}} x_{ij} &= 1 && \text{for all } i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' && (69)\\
x_{j0} + \sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}''} x_{ji} &= 1 && \text{for all } j \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' && (70)\\
x_{j0} + \sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}''} x_{ji} &\leq 1 && \text{for all } j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' && (71)\\
x_{ij} &= 0 && \text{for all } i \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'',\ j \in \mathcal{D}'' && (72)\\
\sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}''\setminus\tilde{\mathcal{O}}''} x_{i0} &= n_v^O - \left|\tilde{\mathcal{O}}''\right| && && (73)\\
\sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}''} x_{0i} &= \max\{0, n_v^O - n_v^D\} && && (74)\\
\sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}''\setminus\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''} x_{0j} &= n_v^D - \left|\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''\right| && && (75)\\
\sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}''} x_{j0} &= \max\{0, n_v^D - n_v^O\} && && (76)\\
\sum_{j\in\mathcal{D}''}\sum_{i\in\mathcal{O}''} x_{ji} &= \min\{n_v^O, n_v^D\} && && (77)\\
\sum_{\{(i,j)\in\mathcal{A}''\,:\,i\in S, j\notin S\}} x_{ij} &\geq 1 && \text{for all } S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'', |S| \geq 2 && (78)\\
\sum_{\{(i,j)\in\mathcal{A}''\,:\,i\notin S, j\in S\}} x_{ij} &\geq 1 && \text{for all } S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'', |S| \geq 2 && (79)\\
x_{ij} &\in \{0,1\} && \text{for all } (i,j) \in \mathcal{A}'' && (80)
\end{aligned}
$$

For each $(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}''$, let

$$\bar{d}''_{ij} \quad := \quad \begin{cases} d''_{ij} & \text{if} \quad i,j \in \{0\} \cup \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \cup \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \\ d''_{ij} + \lambda_j & \text{if} \quad i \in \{0\} \cup \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \cup \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'', j \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \\ d''_{ij} - \sum_{\{S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \,:\, j \in S\}} \mu_S & \text{if} \quad i \in \{0\} \cup \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \cup \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'', j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \\ d''_{ij} - \sum_{\{S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \,:\, i \in S\}} \mu_S & \text{if} \quad i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'', j \in \{0\} \cup \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \\ d''_{ij} + \lambda_i & \text{if} \quad i \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'', j \in \{0\} \cup \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \cup \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \\ d''_{ij} + \lambda_j - \sum_{\{S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \,:\, i \in S, j \notin S\}} \mu_S & \text{if} \quad i,j \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \\ d''_{ij} + \lambda_i - \sum_{\{S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \,:\, i \notin S, j \in S\}} \mu_S & \text{if} \quad i,j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \\ d''_{ij} + \lambda_i + \lambda_j & \text{if} \quad i \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'', j \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'' \end{cases} \tag{81}$$

Then the objective function (60) is equal to

$$\sum_{(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}''} \bar{d}''_{ij} x_{ij} - \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''} \lambda_i - \sum_{i \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''} \lambda_i + \sum_{S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''} \mu_S \sigma(S) + \sum_{S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''} \mu_S \sigma(S)$$

To interpret feasible solutions of the Lagrangian relaxation (60)–(80), partition the arcs $\mathcal{A}''$ into the following subsets:

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{A}''_1 \quad &:= \quad \left\{(i,0) \;:\; i \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''\right\} \cup \left\{(0,j) \;:\; j \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''\right\} \\
\mathcal{A}''_2 \quad &:= \quad \left\{(i,j) \;:\; i \in \mathcal{O}'', j \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''\right\} \cup \left\{(i,j) \;:\; i \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'', j \in \mathcal{O}''\right\} \cup \left\{(i,j) \;:\; i \in \mathcal{D}'', j \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''\right\} \\
&\qquad \cup \left\{(i,j) \;:\; i \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'', j \in \mathcal{D}''\right\} \\
\mathcal{A}''_3 \quad &:= \quad \left\{(i,j) \;:\; i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'', j \in \{0\} \cup \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''\right\} \\
\mathcal{A}''_4 \quad &:= \quad \left\{(i,j) \;:\; i \in \{0\} \cup \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'', j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''\right\} \\
\mathcal{A}''_5 \quad &:= \quad \{(i,j) \;:\; i \in \{0\} \cup \mathcal{D}'', j \in \{0\} \cup \mathcal{O}''\}
\end{aligned}$$

First, observe that each of the constraints (61)–(79) involves decision variables x_{ij} for arcs (i,j) in only one of the subsets above. Specifically, constraints (64) and (67) involve arcs in $\mathcal{A}''_1$ only; constraints (63), (65), (68), and (72) involve arcs in $\mathcal{A}''_2$ only; constraints (69), (73), and (78) involve arcs in $\mathcal{A}''_3$ only; constraints (66), (75), and (79) involve arcs in $\mathcal{A}''_4$ only; and constraints (61), (62), (70), (71), (74), (76), and (77) involve arcs in $\mathcal{A}_5''$ only. Also, clearly each individual constraint in (80) involves an arc in only one of the subsets above. Thus, the Lagrangian relaxation (60)–(80) decomposes into 5 subproblems, corresponding to the sets of arcs and constraints identified above. Next we consider each of these 5 subproblems in turn.

For the subproblem involving $\mathcal{A}_1''$, it follows from constraints (64) and (67) that $x_{ij} = 1$ for all $(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}_1''$.

For the subproblem involving $\mathcal{A}_2''$, it follows from constraints (63), (65), (68), and (72) that $x_{ij} = 0$ for all $(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}_2''$.

For the subproblem involving $\mathcal{A}_3''$, it follows from constraint (69) that exactly one arc out of each node $i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$ must be chosen, it follows from constraint (73) that exactly $n_v^O - \left|\tilde{\mathcal{O}}''\right|$ arcs from nodes $i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$ to the terminal node 0 must be chosen, and it follows from constraint (78) that for each subset $S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$, at least one arc out of the subset must be chosen, and thus it follows from constraints (69), (73), and (78) that the chosen arcs may not form any cycles in $\mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$. In other words, the chosen arcs in $\mathcal{A}_3''$ must form a spanning anti-arborescence on the nodes $\{0\} \cup \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$ with the terminal node 0 being the root node and with fixed indegree $n_v^O - |\tilde{\mathcal{O}}''|$ at node 0. Thus the subproblem involving $\mathcal{A}_3''$ is a shortest spanning anti-arborescence problem with fixed indegree $K^O := n_v^O - |\tilde{\mathcal{O}}''|$ at the terminal node 0 (K^O-SSAA), and with arc costs given by $\bar{d}_{ij}''$.

Similarly, it follows from constraints (66), (75), and (79) that the subproblem involving $\mathcal{A}_4''$ is a shortest spanning arborescence problem with fixed outdegree $K^D := n_v^D - |\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''|$ at the terminal node 0 (K^D-SSA), and with arc costs given by $\bar{d}_{ij}''$. Problems K^O-SSAA and K^D-SSA can be solved in $O(|\mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''|^2)$ and $O(|\mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''|^2)$ time respectively, for example with the algorithm of (39).

Next we show that the subproblem involving $\mathcal{A}_5''$ can be represented as a network flow problem. The network flow problem has a node for each node in $\mathcal{V}''$, as well as an additional source node s and sink node t. The supply at the source node and the demand at the sink node are both equal to $\max\{n_v^O, n_v^D\}$. There is an arc (s,j) from the source node s to each node $j \in \mathcal{D}''$ with cost 0. The lower bound of the flow on each arc (s,j) is 1 if $j \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$ and 0 if $j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$. The upper bound of the flow on each arc (s,j) is 1. There is an arc (j,i) from each node $j \in \mathcal{D}''$ to each node $i \in \mathcal{O}''$ with cost $\bar{d}''_{ji}$. The lower bound of the flow on each such arc (j,i) is 0, and the upper bound of the flow on each such arc (j,i) is 1. There is an arc (i,t) from each node $i \in \mathcal{O}''$ to the sink node t with cost 0. The lower bound of the flow on each arc (i,t) is 1 if $i \in \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$ and 0 if $i \in \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$, and the upper bound of the flow on each arc (i,t) is 1. Suppose that $n_v^O > n_v^D$. Then there is an arc $(s,0)$ with cost 0. The lower bound and the upper bound of the flow on arc $(s,0)$ are both equal to $n_v^O - n_v^D$. There is also an arc $(0,i)$ from node 0 to each node $i \in \mathcal{O}''$ with cost $\bar{d}''_{0i}$. The lower bound of the flow on each such arc $(0,i)$ is 0, and the upper bound of the flow on each such arc $(0,i)$ is 1. If $n_v^O < n_v^D$, then there is an arc $(j,0)$ from each node $j \in \mathcal{D}''$ to node 0 with cost $\bar{d}''_{j0}$, lower bound 0, and upper bound 1, and an arc $(0,t)$ with cost 0, and lower bound and upper bound both equal to $n_v^D - n_v^O$. It is easy to see that for every solution that satisfies constraints (61), (62), (70), (71), (74), (76), (77), and (80) (for $(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}''_5$), there is a feasible integer flow for the network flow problem described above with the same cost, and vice versa. The network flow problem can be solved in $O(\max\{n_v^O, n_v^D\}(|\mathcal{O}''| + |\mathcal{D}''|)^2)$ time, for example with a shortest augmenting path algorithm; see, for example, (1).

Next we briefly address the following two issues. First, the number of subsets $S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$ and $S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$ in the Lagrangian objective (60) may be very large. Second, we want to find multipliers λ, μ that solve the Lagrangian dual problem

$$\max_{\lambda,\mu} \left\{ L\left(\mathcal{O}'', \mathcal{D}'', Q'', d'', n_v^O, n_v^D, \lambda, \mu\right) \ : \ \mu \geq 0 \right\}$$

We use the same subgradient optimization procedure described in (66) to simultaneously address both issues. Briefly, instead of enumerating all subsets $S \subset \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$ and $S \subset \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$, at each major iteration the procedure identifies subtrees in the

K^O-SSAA and K^D-SSA that violate constraints (44) and (45) respectively, and adds the terms corresponding to the subsets S of nodes in the violating subtrees to the Lagrangian objective (60). The identification of the violating subtrees can be done in $O(|\mathcal{O}''\backslash\tilde{\mathcal{O}}''|)$ and $O(|\mathcal{D}''\backslash\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''|)$ time respectively. During each major iteration, the multipliers λ and μ are updated by performing several minor iterations of a subgradient search. For additional details, we refer to (66).

2.6.2.3 Second Splitting Step

When progress made by the subgradient optimization procedure in solving the Lagrangian dual problem slows down, the procedure is stopped. The last K^O-SSAA and K^D-SSA constructed are considered. If there are no subarborescences in the K^O-SSAA and K^D-SSA that violate constraints (44) and (45) respectively, then set $\tilde{\mathcal{O}}''' := \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$, $\mathcal{O}''' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''' := \mathcal{O}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}''$, $\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''' := \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$, $\mathcal{D}''' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''' := \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$, and continue with the assignment-routing step described in Section 2.6.2.5. Otherwise, a second round of node splitting is performed, as described in this section.

Suppose there are subarborescences in the K^D-SSA constructed on nodes $\{0\} \cup \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$ that violate constraint (45). The set $\mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$ is partitioned into $K^D := n_v^D - |\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''|$ subsets $\mathcal{D}_k''$, $k = 1, \ldots, K^D$, corresponding to the K^D subarborescences in the K^D-SSA rooted at node 0. For each $j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$ and $k \in \{1, \ldots, K^D\}$, let $\underline{d}_{jk}'' := \min\{d_{ji}'' : i \in \mathcal{D}_k''\}$ denote the distance between node j and subarborescence k. Note that if $j \in \mathcal{D}_k''$, then $\underline{d}_{jk}'' = 0$. Next the following transportation problem is solved to assign loads to subarborescences in such a way that the total load assigned to each subarborescence is less than the vehicle capacity, and such that the total assignment cost is minimized.

$$\min_y \quad \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''} \sum_{k=1}^{K^D} \underline{d}_{jk}'' y_{jk} \tag{82}$$

$$\text{subject to} \quad \sum_{k=1}^{K^D} y_{jk} = Q_j'' \qquad \text{for all } j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'' \tag{83}$$

$$\sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''} y_{jk} \leq Q_v \qquad \text{for all } k \in \{1, \ldots, K^D\} \tag{84}$$

$$y_{jk} \geq 0 \qquad \text{for all } j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'',\ k \in \{1, \ldots, K^D\} \tag{85}$$

Let y^* denote an optimal solution of problem (82)–(85). The new set $\mathcal{D}'''$ of nodes and their loads $Q_i''', i \in \mathcal{D}'''$ are determined as follows: $\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''' := \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$ and $Q_i''' := Q_v$ for all $i \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'''$. Also, for each $j \in \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$ and each $k \in \{1, \ldots, K^D\}$ such that $y_{jk}^* > 0$, there is a node $i \in \mathcal{D}''' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'''$ with load size $Q_i''' := y_{jk}^*$. If there are no subarborescences in the K^D-SSA that violate constraint (45), then $\tilde{\mathcal{D}}''' := \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$, $\mathcal{D}''' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''' := \mathcal{D}'' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}''$, and $Q_i''' := Q_i''$ for all $i \in \mathcal{D}'''$. The sets $\tilde{\mathcal{O}}'''$, $\mathcal{O}''' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{O}}'''$, and the loads Q_i''' for $i \in \mathcal{O}'''$, are determined similarly based on the K^O-SSAA. Note that after this second splitting, we are guaranteed to find a feasible solution of the VRPBS, as long as $n_v^O \geq \lceil \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}'} Q_i'/Q_v \rceil$ and $n_v^D \geq \left\lceil \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}'} Q_j'/Q_v \right\rceil$.

Let $\mathcal{V}''' := \{0\} \cup \mathcal{O}''' \cup \mathcal{D}'''$ denote the new set of nodes, and $\mathcal{A}''' := \{(i,j) \in (\mathcal{V}''')^2 \setminus \mathcal{O}''' \times \mathcal{D}''' \ : \ i \neq j\}$ denote the new set of arcs. For $(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}'''$, the vehicle movement costs $d_{i,j}'''$ are obtained from the given vehicle movement costs d, and as before if i and j correspond to the same original point, then $d_{i,j}''' := \varepsilon$ for some chosen $\varepsilon > 0$.

2.6.2.4 *Second Clustering Step*

After the second splitting step, a second clustering step is performed. The second clustering step is the same as the initial clustering step described in Section 2.6.2.2, but with $\mathcal{O}'''$, $\mathcal{D}'''$, $\mathcal{V}'''$, $\mathcal{A}'''$, Q''', and d''' instead of $\mathcal{O}''$, $\mathcal{D}''$, $\mathcal{V}''$, $\mathcal{A}''$, Q'', and d'' respectively.

2.6.2.5 *Assignment-Routing Step*

Consider the K^O-SSAA and K^D-SSA constructed in the last clustering step. The set $\mathcal{D}'''$ is partitioned into n_v^D subsets as follows. First, $\tilde{\mathcal{D}}'''$ is partitioned into its singletons: for each $k = 1, \ldots, |\tilde{\mathcal{D}}'''|$, choose without replacement $i \in \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'''$ and set $\mathcal{D}_k''' := \{i\}$. Second, the set $\mathcal{D}''' \setminus \tilde{\mathcal{D}}'''$ is partitioned into $K^D := n_v^D - |\tilde{\mathcal{D}}'''|$ subsets $\mathcal{D}_k''', k = |\tilde{\mathcal{D}}'''| + 1, \ldots, n_v^D$, corresponding to the K^D subarborescences in the K^D-SSA rooted at node 0. Similarly, set $\mathcal{O}'''$ is partitioned into n_v^O subsets $\mathcal{O}_l''', l = 1, \ldots, n_v^O$. For each $k \in \{1, \ldots, n_v^D\}$ and $l \in \{1, \ldots, n_v^O\}$, consider the traveling salesman problem (TSP) with node set $\mathcal{V}_{kl}''' := \{0\} \cup \mathcal{D}_k''' \cup \mathcal{O}_l'''$, arc set $\mathcal{A}_{kl}''' := \{(i,j) \in (\mathcal{V}_{kl}''')^2 \setminus \mathcal{O}_l''' \times \mathcal{D}_k''' \ : \ i \neq j\}$, and arc costs d_{ij}''', $(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}_{kl}'''$. Note that by construction the TSP has the precedence constraint that after 0, all nodes in $\mathcal{D}_k'''$ must be visited before any nodes in $\mathcal{O}_l'''$ are visited, and is thus called the traveling salesman problem with backhauls (TSPB). Let $\underline{d}_{kl}'''$ denote the optimal objective value, or an estimate of the optimal objective value, of the TSPB. Similar to (67), we use the farthest insertion heuristic to obtain a solution of the TSPB, and set $\underline{d}_{kl}'''$ equal to the objective value of the solution produced by the heuristic. In addition, for each $k \in \{1, \ldots, n_v^D\}$, consider the TSP with node set $\mathcal{V}_{k0}''' := \{0\} \cup \mathcal{D}_k'''$, arc set $\mathcal{A}_{k0}''' := \{(i,j) \in (\mathcal{V}_{k0}''')^2 \ : \ i \neq j\}$, and arc costs d_{ij}''', $(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}_{k0}'''$. Let $\underline{d}_{k0}'''$ denote the optimal objective value, or an estimate of the optimal objective value, of the TSP. Similarly, for each $l \in \{1, \ldots, n_v^O\}$, consider the TSP with node set $\mathcal{V}_{0l}''' := \{0\} \cup \mathcal{O}_l'''$, arc set $\mathcal{A}_{0l}''' := \{(i,j) \in (\mathcal{V}_{0l}''')^2 \ : \ i \neq j\}$, and arc costs d_{ij}''', $(i,j) \in \mathcal{A}_{0l}'''$. Let $\underline{d}_{0l}'''$ denote the optimal objective value, or an estimate of the optimal objective value, of the TSP.

Next the following assignment problem is solved to combine subsets of $\mathcal{D}'''$ and $\mathcal{O}'''$ into vehicle routes.

$$\min_z \quad \sum_{k=1}^{n_v^D} \underline{d}_{k0}''' z_{k0} + \sum_{l=1}^{n_v^O} \underline{d}_{0l}''' z_{0l} + \sum_{k=1}^{n_v^D} \sum_{l=1}^{n_v^O} \underline{d}_{kl}''' z_{kl} \tag{86}$$

$$\text{subject to} \quad z_{k0} + \sum_{l=1}^{n_v^O} z_{kl} = 1 \qquad \text{for all } k \in \{1, \ldots, n_v^D\} \tag{87}$$

$$z_{0l} + \sum_{k=1}^{n_v^D} z_{kl} = 1 \qquad \text{for all } l \in \{1, \ldots, n_v^O\} \tag{88}$$

$$z_{k0}, z_{0l}, z_{kl} \in \{0,1\} \quad \text{for all } k \in \{1, \ldots, n_v^D\},\ l \in \{1, \ldots, n_v^O\} \tag{89}$$

Let z^* denote an optimal solution of problem (86)–(89). If $z_{kl}^* = 1$, then the nodes in

$\{0\}$, $\mathcal{D}_k'''$ and $\mathcal{O}_l'''$ are included in a vehicle route given by the TSPB discussed above. Similarly, if $z_{k0}^* = 1$, then the nodes in $\{0\}$ and $\mathcal{D}_k'''$ are included in a vehicle route, and if $z_{0l}^* = 1$, then the nodes in $\{0\}$ and $\mathcal{O}_l'''$ are included in a vehicle route, given by the TSP. The resulting routes may violate vehicle capacity constraints. The improvement step discussed in the next section attempts to modify routes to eliminate violations of capacity constraints.

2.6.2.6 Improvement Heuristic

After construction of the vehicle routes as described in the previous section, an improvement heuristic is applied to modify routes to eliminate violations of capacity constraints, and to reduce the costs. (Note that another reasonable option is to first obtain a feasible solution by applying the assignment-routing step in Section 2.6.2.5 to the feasible solution obtained in the second splitting step in Section 2.6.2.3, and to then use an improvement heuristic to find a solution with a better objective value.) The improvement heuristic is the same as the post-optimization procedure described in (67). Briefly, intra-route 2-exchanges and 3-exchanges are performed in each route to reduce the cost of the route. Also, inter-route 1-exchanges and 2-exchanges are performed to reduce the amount by which capacity constraints are violated, and to reduce the costs of the routes. We refer to (67) for additional details.

Let $\tilde{\tau}\left(\mathcal{O}', \mathcal{D}', Q', d', n_v^O, n_v^D\right)$ denote the total cost of the resulting solution of the VRPBS, given that exactly n_v^O vehicles serve the origins $\mathcal{O}'$ and exactly n_v^D vehicles serve the destinations $\mathcal{D}'$. (Note that $\mathcal{O}'''$, $\mathcal{D}'''$, $\mathcal{V}'''$, $\mathcal{A}'''$, Q''', and d''' are determined by $\mathcal{O}'$, $\mathcal{D}'$, Q', and d', and thus we may denote $\tilde{\tau}$ as a function of $\mathcal{O}'$, $\mathcal{D}'$, Q', and d'.) Then let

$$\begin{aligned} \hat{\tau}\left(\mathcal{O}', \mathcal{D}', Q', d', n_v'\right) \quad := \quad & \min_{n_v^O, n_v^D} \quad \left\{c_v \max\{n_v^O, n_v^D\} + \tilde{\tau}\left(\mathcal{O}', \mathcal{D}', Q', d', n_v^O, n_v^D\right)\right\} \\ & \text{subject to} \quad n_v^O \quad \in \quad \left\{\left\lceil \sum_{i \in \mathcal{O}'} Q_i'/Q_v \right\rceil, \ldots, n_v'\right\} \end{aligned}$$

$$n_v^D \in \left\{ \left\lceil \sum_{j \in \mathcal{D}'} Q'_j / Q_v \right\rceil, \ldots, n'_v \right\}$$

denote the total cost of the resulting solution of the VRPBS.

Recall that, as referred to in Section 2.5.4, the number n_v^m of vehicles for each terminal m can be chosen by solving

$$\begin{array}{rl} \min_{n_v^m} & \left\{ C_v n_v^m + \sum_{\omega \in \Omega} p(\omega) \hat{\tau} \left(\mathcal{O}^m(z^m(\omega)), \mathcal{D}^m(z^m(\omega)), Q^m(z^m(\omega), \omega), d^m(z^m(\omega)), n_v^m \right) \right\} \\ \text{subject to} & n_v^m \in \{L_m, L_m + 1, L_m + 2, \ldots, L_m + k\} \end{array}$$

where $z^m(\omega)$ can be chosen as described in Section 2.6.1, and $\mathcal{O}^m(z^m(\omega))$, $\mathcal{D}^m(z^m(\omega))$, $Q^m(z^m(\omega), \omega)$, and $d^m(z^m(\omega))$ are defined in Section 2.3.

2.7 Evaluation of the Proposed CA Solutions

To evaluate our solutions, we considered eight combinations of small and large datasets, with origins and destinations uniformly and nonuniformly distributed, and with origin-destination flows correlated and uncorrelated, as described in more detail below. For each set of origin and destination locations, we generated ten flow scenarios according to a specified distribution as described below, and used these ten design scenarios to make the design decisions, namely selection of the number of terminals and the thresholds, and the location of the terminals, using the method described in Section 2.5. We also solved the TEMC problem (24)–(28) using the same ten design scenarios, which provided a design for comparison. We selected the same vehicle fleet sizes, namely $L_m + 2$, to evaluate both the CA solution and the TEMC solution. Using the same flow distribution, we then generated flow scenarios for evaluation, independent of the design scenarios, and calculated the cost for each evaluation scenario using the approach described in Section 2.6 to make the operational decisions. Specifically, for each evaluation scenario we selected which terminal served each origin-destination flow and how to route the vehicles from each terminal to do the pickups and deliveries.

The origin and destination locations. The industry dataset with 148 origins and 36 destinations, shown in Figure 5, provided a set of origins and destinations for evaluation, namely for the two cases (correlated and uncorrelated flows) with small datasets and nonuniform distributions of origins and destinations. To generate origin and destination locations "uniformly", we selected 1097 cities roughly uniformly distributed across the USA. For the two cases with small datasets and uniform distributions of origins and destinations, we sampled 148 of these 1097 cities without replacement to be origins, and 41 of these 1097 cities without replacement to be destinations. For the two cases with large datasets and uniform distributions of origins and destinations, the numbers of origins and destinations chosen were 243 and 105 respectively. Finally, for the two cases with large datasets and nonuniform distributions of origins and destinations, we used only the 788 of the 1097 cities that were approximately west of Colorado and east of Illinois, and then chose 248 origins and 134 destinations from the 788 cities without replacement. The reason for having more origins than destinations was to mimic the observed situations in the motivating industrial datasets.

Flow generation. Next we describe how we generated flows between origins and destinations for each of the eight cases. We first decided which origin-destination pairs would have positive flow. Because long distance positive flows tend to be less frequent than positive flows between origin-destination pairs located closer together, we selected each origin-destination pair with the origin located approximately west of Colorado (east of Illinois) and with the destination located approximately east of Illinois (west of Colorado) with probability 0.15 to have zero flow, independently for all origin-destination pairs. In addition, for the four large cases, each remaining origin-destination pair, including the above mentioned "cross-country" pairs as well as pairs closer to each other, was assigned zero flow with probability 0.5, again independently for all origin-destination pairs. The remaining origin-destination pairs were assigned positive flows as described below. The expected number of positive flows was thus

$$\frac{1}{2}\mathbb{I}(\text{“large” case})\times\left(\begin{array}{l}\text{total number of origin-destination pairs}\\ -0.15\times\ \text{the number of “cross-country” origin-destination pairs}\end{array}\right),$$

which yielded approximately 5000 positive flows for the small cases and 10,000 positive flows for the large cases.

For the origin-destination pairs having positive flow, we generated the size of the flow according to a uniform distribution between 0 and an origin-specific upper bound that follows approximately an exponential distribution among origins. Recall from Figure 6 that the industrial dataset shows that a small fraction of the origin-destination pairs accounts for a large fraction of the total flow. Similarly, a small fraction of the origins, mostly the origins of bulky goods, accounts for a large fraction of the total flow. To mimic this skewed flow distribution, we generated the flow upper bounds of the origins as follows. We first generated a random permutation of the origins to label the origins from 1 to $|\mathcal{O}|$. Then the flow from each origin i to any destination with positive origin-destination flow was distributed uniformly on $[0, \mathcal{F}\exp(-\mu(i-1))]$, for $i \in \{1, \ldots, |\mathcal{O}|\}$. Here, μ was chosen as 0.045 for all cases, and $\mathcal{F}$ was chosen as 1200 for the small nonuniform cases, 2500 for the small uniform cases, 4500 for the large nonuniform cases, 4200 for the uncorrelated large uniform case, and 4700 for the correlated large uniform case.

Finally, for the four cases with uncorrelated flows, we generated independent random variables with uniform distributions as described above for every origin-destination pair with positive flow. For the four cases with correlated flows, we first generated independent uniform random variables as described above, and then multiplied all these independently generated flows by a single realization of a uniform $(0.7, 1.3)$ random variable. It was of interest to also test our approach with correlated flow distributions because in practice flows are often correlated. For example, for home improvement retailers, shipments between origins and destinations tend to be relatively large during spring and summer.

Results. First we evaluate the accuracy of the cost approximation obtained with the CA method. For each of the eight cases described above, we generated 10 scenarios, and then we calculated, for various numbers of terminals, the cost approximation obtained with the CA method as well as the actual cost for each scenario using the approach described in Section 2.6 to make the operational decisions. Table 2 shows the actual costs and estimated costs obtained with the CA method, averaged over the 10 scenarios. Figures 2.7–7 show the results graphically. Although the CA method does not always produce a very accurate approximation, in all the cases it correctly identifies the number of terminals that results in the least cost.

Next we compare the objective values resulting from the CA method and the objective values resulting from the TEMC solution, using evaluation scenarios independent of the design scenarios. Because the time involved in performing the detailed routing calculations described in Section 2.6.2 was large, it was not practical to generate a huge number of evaluation scenarios and calculate the cost associated with each one. Therefore, we only generated enough scenarios (around 35) to ensure that the sample standard deviation of the sample average cost difference was less than half the sample average cost difference. Specifically, let

$$\begin{aligned} \{\omega_1, \ldots, \omega_M\} &:= \text{set of evaluation scenarios} \\ c_{CA}(\omega_m) &:= \text{cost of the CA design for scenario } \omega_m \\ c_{TEMC}(\omega_m) &:= \text{cost of the TEMC design for scenario } \omega_m. \end{aligned}$$

Demands	Origins and Destinations		Number of Terminals	Actual Cost	CA Estimated Cost
	Total number	Location Distribution			
Uncorrelated	Small	Uniform	1	743,075	737,338
			2	753,707	770,067
			3	799,037	809,545
			4	822,046	844,915
		Nonuniform (Industry data)	1	300,212	356,074
			2	317,000	392,702
			3	357,640	430,923
			4	365,542	470,070
	Large	Uniform	1	1,513,436	1,525,370
			2	1,540,046	1,527,650
			3	1,566,492	1,542,820
			4	1,562,617	1,571,090
		Nonuniform	2	1,881,138	1,958,590
			3	1,865,883	1,930,010
			4	1,822,160	1,925,150
			5	1,949,174	1,938,910
Correlated	Small	Uniform	1	659,228	666,807
			2	682,781	703,154
			3	681,494	740,171
			4	695,316	780,185
		Nonuniform (Industry data)	1	263,856	354,178
			2	295,645	389,153
			3	356,392	426,955
			4	344,751	462,617
	Large	Uniform	1	1,863,252	1,526,990
			2	1,995,215	1,529,360
			3	2,017,273	1,544,430
			4	2,120,313	1,567,960
		Nonuniform	1	1,989,250	1,691,180
			2	1,731,072	1,652,750
			3	1,663,564	1,640,030
			4	1,748,914	1,649,210

Table 2: Actual costs and estimated costs obtained with the continuous approximation method.

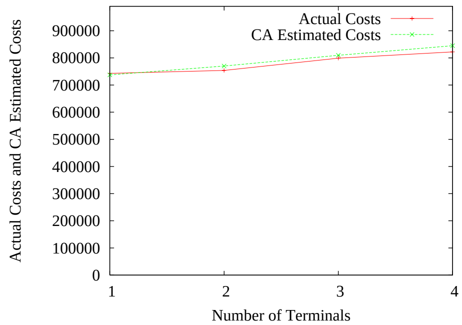
Uncorrelated Demands

Origins and Destinations		Number of Terminals		Cost			
Total number	Location Distribution	TEMC	CA	TEMC	CA	STD	% Decrease
Small	Uniform	2	1	745,652	736,105	2403	1.28%
	Nonuniform (Industry data)	2	1	330,052	294,981	2245	10.63%
Large	Uniform	2	1	1,527,058	1,504,558	5648	1.47%
	Nonuniform	2	4	1,893,929	1,828,978	9007	3.43%

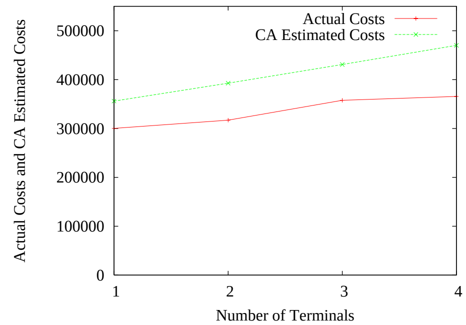
Correlated Demands

Origins and Destinations		Number of Terminals		Cost			
Total number	Location Distribution	TEMC	CA	TEMC	CA	STD	% Decrease
Small	Uniform	2	1	777,824	765,139	3683	1.63%
	Nonuniform (Industry data)	2	1	324,890	286,896	2662	11.69%
Large	Uniform	2	1	2,170,319	2,081,101	16929	4.11%
	Nonuniform	1	3	2,142,271	1,761,383	19199	17.78%

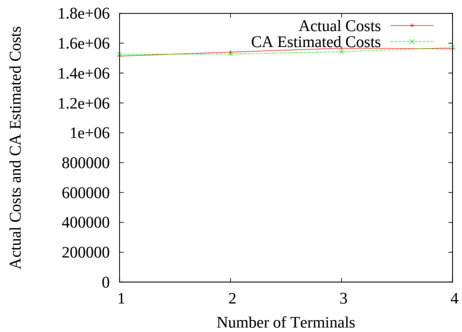
Table 3: Numbers of terminals chosen and resulting costs.



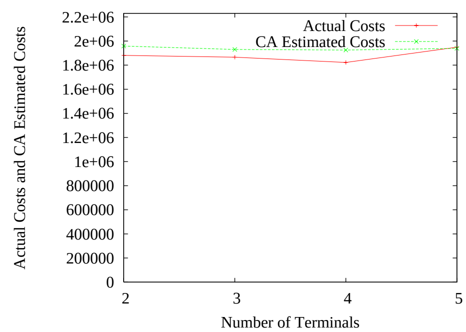
(a) Uncorrelated demand, small number of uniformly distributed origins and destinations.



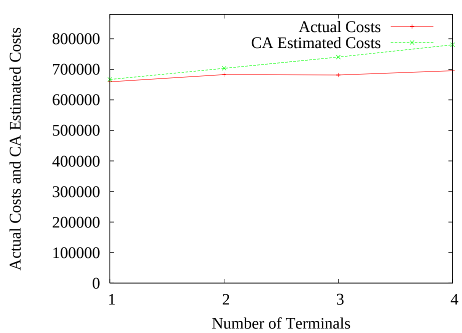
(b) Uncorrelated demand, small number of nonuniformly distributed origins and destinations



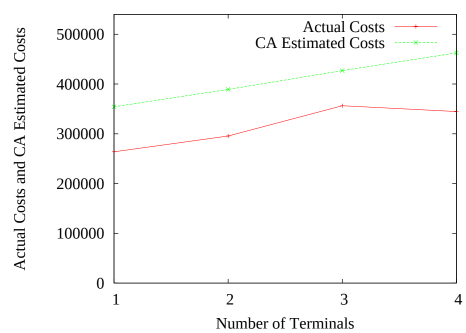
(c) Uncorrelated demand, large number of uniformly distributed origins and destinations.



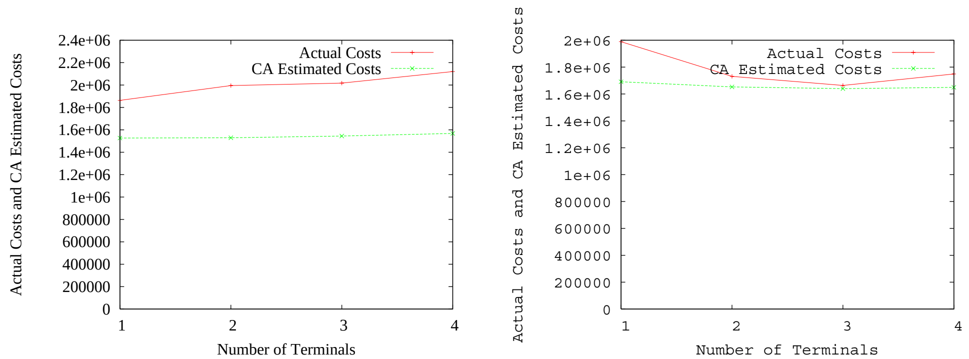
(d) Uncorrelated demand, large number of nonuniformly distributed origins and destinations



(e) Correlated demand, small number of uniformly distributed origins and destinations.



(f) Correlated demand, small number of nonuniformly distributed origins and destinations



(g) Correlated demand, large number of uniformly distributed origins and destinations.

(h) Correlated demand, large number of nonuniformly distributed origins and destinations

Figure 7: Actual costs and estimated costs obtained with the continuous approximation method.

Then, the evaluation sample size M is chosen large enough so that

$$\sqrt{\frac{1}{M}\frac{1}{(M-1)}\left[\sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(c_{CA}(\omega_m)-c_{TEMC}(\omega_m)\right)^2-\frac{\left(\sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(c_{CA}(\omega_m)-c_{TEMC}(\omega_m)\right)\right)^2}{M}\right]}$$
$$< \frac{1}{2}\left|\frac{\sum_{m=1}^{M}\left(c_{CA}(\omega_m)-c_{TEMC}(\omega_m)\right)}{M}\right|. \tag{90}$$

Table 3 displays the number of terminals chosen in both the CA and TEMC solutions, the average cost of both solutions, the sample standard deviation of the sample average cost difference given in (90), and the percentage cost improvement of the CA solution over the TEMC solution. All the cases investigated showed cost improvement of at least 1%, with one case showing a cost improvement of more than 10%. Observe that the cases with the largest percentage improvements (4.30%, 7.53%, and 11.21%) are also the cases in which the number of terminals chosen by the CA vs. the TEMC solution differs by more than 1.

CHAPTER III

MODELS FOR OPTION-CONTRACTING STRATEGY WITH BUYERS' LEARNING

3.1 Introduction

This paper considers a option contract and spot market where there are a seller and multiple buyers. The seller can either contract with buyer to provide a fixed quantity of goods using option or can sell its goods in an alternative market, called the spot market. Simultaneously, buyers may contract with seller to satisfy their own future demand and purchase their extra demand through the spot market. Typical examples in the option contract and spot market include chemicals (47), semiconductors (13), electric power (20) and energy such as oil and gas (38).

Traditionally, the option contract and spot market problem is generally evaluated for a given exogenous price distribution with the assumption that the operational decisions of the seller are unaffected by buyers' purchasing behavior. In many cases, however, common assumptions of independence between buyers' behavior and seller's pricing decision in the spot market are not desirable or reasonable. In practice, buyers do make a response substantially on seller's decision and may have a significant effect on future decision of the seller. These findings raise an important research question in the option contract and spot market problem: Can the spot price forecasted by buyers and the actual spot price decided by the seller be well-reacted by endogenously incorporating buyer's response to seller's decision? The impact of the buyers' response on option contract decisions and seller's pricing decisions has not been well studied in the existing literature. (See section 3.2.)

In this paper, we present a model to analyze an option contract and spot market by explicitly recognizing the aforementioned findings. First, there are many buyers in the market. So, each buyer thinks that his/her decision on the option contract doest not make any difference on the spot price. Moreover, buyers are uncertain regarding the future demand level. So, as a spot price forecasting method, buyers learn about the seller's offered prices in the spot market from their prior purchasing experience and modifies their future purchasing behavior in response to the spot prices provided by the seller in the past history. Thus, buyers dynamically switches the purchasing decision of options based on the history of spot prices their has actually accumulated, rather than on the given static and exogenous price distribution. Second, we consider the notion of buyers' equally weighed experience over time, that is, buyers weighs the past purchasing experiences in the spot market equally and thus uses the empirical distribution as price forecasting method. Under this buyer model, we analyze the buyers' learning behavior on spot price decided by the seller in the spot market. Finally, we consider other two cases in which buyers are smart enough to know how the spot price will be decided by the seller.

This paper is organized as follows. Section 3.2 introduces relevant literature in the option contract and spot market. Section 3.3 describes the framework in which buyers try to learn the seller's pricing policy by observing the seller's previous decisions as if the spot price does not depend on the future demand level and buyers' decision. Section 3.4 describes the framework in which buyer are smart enough to know the seller's pricing policy. So, buyers know that there is relationship of the spot price with future demand level and buyers' own decision. Section 3.5 shows the comparison among various frameworks.

3.2 Literature Review

The form of option contract modeled in this paper is call option in the following sense: The buyer of the option has the right, but not the obligation to buy an agreed quantity of a particular goods or financial underlying instrument from the seller of the option at a certain time (the expiration date) for a certain price (the strike price, K). The seller is obligated to sell the goods or financial underlying instrument should the buyer so decide. The buyer pays a fee (called a option price, π) for this right. This form of contract has been widely used and studied in finance sector. (6) and (10) are the well-known literatures in the explanation of finance option. (34), (55), (68) and (69) are another finance literatures in the real option. However, the option in those literatures assumed to be exogenous in the following sense: they assume that the market price of the underlying securities moves stochastically which implies that it is independent of the option contract.

In the operation research and revenue management literature, there are many studies about relationship between the long-term contract and spot market/e-market purchasing. (47) address the integration of option contract via spot market and survey the underlying theory and practices using the option in support of emerging business-to-business markets. It refers the option contract as long-term contracting and spot market as Business-to-Business exchanges and gives an excellent literature review on this option contract market.

(74) and (73) models contract between single seller and one or more buyers where the non-scalable goods or services are sold. By assuming that the price in the spot market is uncertain but its distribution function is common knowledge, it shows that the seller's optimal pricing policy is to set the strike price to the marginal cost and characterizes the condition for the existence of positive option contract. It is also shown that if the seller can sell all its residual goods in the spot market, then the seller will not sign any option contract with the buyer. In its model, the price in the spot market assumed to follow the given probability distribution but not to be determined by the seller. This implies that the price in the spot market is independent of the option contract.

(64) incorporates the state of economy into the buyer's willingness-to-pay (WTP) function and use the same assumptions as in (74) and (73). Then, it derives analytical expressions for the buyer's optimal quantity of option and the seller's optimal pricing policy and shows that the main results in (74) and (73) still hold. It refers the buyer's quantity of option as buyer's reservation quantity and the seller's pricing policy as the seller's tariff.

(56) studies the role and value of B2B exchanges and their interaction with supply chain contracting. They consider two-level but three-stage supply chain with multiple sellers and buyers where forward-type contracting (first level) in the first stage, participants' reception of private information in the second stage and a B2B exchange (second level) as a spot market in the third stage are considered. They derive the equilibrium on the clearing price, contracted quantities and the traded quantities of product, and investigates the effect of B2B exchanges on the four factors such as changes in industry structure, information effects in the second stage, volatility induced by the multiple manufacturers and price flexibility.

(52) considers the impacts of a Internet-based secondary market in a two-period model where resellers can buy and sell excess inventories at period 2. However, the resellers can not buy any additional product from the manufacturer (supplier) at period 2 but only order the products at Period 1. Then it shows that the secondary market always improves allocative efficiency but total sales for the manufacturer at period 1 may increase or decrease.

(62) considers the two-period market model where demands and purchases can occur at both periods and unsatisfied demand at period 1 is backlogged to period 2. At the beginning of period 2, the buyer can make additional purchases from one of the following arrangements: strategic partnership with seller at period 1, auction-based online search strategy or a combined strategy. It shows that the superiority of one strategy to the others depends on the distribution of the lowest online price as well as

the contract price negotiated with the supplier at period 1. Moreover, it shows that in general no strategy dominates the others but the auction-based online strategy can be of value to the buyer when procuring a well-define good.

(21) models the selection problem of the long-term vs. short-term contract for a risk-averse buyer. Short-term contract in this model means the purchase of parts/goods in the (spot) market which should be immediately delivered to the buyer. The model is used to analyze the tradeoff between benefit of price certainty, cost improvement and fixed expense offered by the long-term contract and the flexibility and zero-fixed expense offered by the short-term contract. It shows that long-term contract may not always be optimal and introduce the conditions under which the short-term contract may be better off. (Impact of decision maker's risk attitude, market price uncertainty and fixed investment)

(53) models the option contract and spot market problem where there are one buyer and multiple sellers. In the spot market, the buyer will face the additional risks and costs from the last-minute nature of spot procurement, which it called as demand-uncertainty and "buyer-related" adaptation cost, respectively. It studies the trade-off between the costs and risks when buyer makes purchases in the spot market. It shows that the imperfect codifiability (adaptation cost for the buyer and contract cost advantage for the supplier) tends to push the buyer toward option contract and may result in lower overall demand.

(70) models the competition problem between procurement auction and long-term contract. It considers a tow-layer supply chain where multiple suppliers of a "part" transact with a set of manufacturers that utilize that part in the production of an end-product. Then, an auction-based e-market is used for the procurement of low quality parts and long-term relational contracts are employed for the procurement of high quality parts. (So, the manufacturer as a buyer purchases goods of different quality in each market.) It shows conditions under which each procurement mechanism will

prevail and push the other out of the market, as well as conditions under which they coexist.

In the existing literatures, the option contract and spot market problem has been studied in the condition under which the price in the spot market assumes to be given by some exogenous probability distribution and the model setting itself is static. "Exogenous" means that the spice in the spot market is decided independently of the contract transaction between the buyer and the seller. However, if a single seller model setting is considered, then it is natural to assume that the price in the spot market be controlled by the seller. Therefore, the seller would take the option contract into account when deciding the price in the spot market. This implies that the buyer's decision and spot price are endogenously related in some sense. Moreover, in the option contract and spot market, the buyer makes option contracts and purchases goods in the spot market in multiple times. This implies that there is a chance that the buyer can learn how the spot prices has been fluctuated in previous history and would take this accumulated information into account when making the option contract in the future. Therefore the model should be dynamical when considering this buyer's behavior.

Some recent literature on revenue management consider how buyer strategically react to the seller's pricing policy and dynamic model setting problem. (2), (5), and (37) consider the strategic buyer who takes into account the given future path of prices when making purchasing decisions in addition to his/her positive surplus defined as a difference between buyer's valuation and price. They consider that the buyer make a purchase only if his/her current surplus is larger than the future expected surplus. (54) considers the strategic buyer who is fully rational as commonly used assumption in game theory and the seller who know that the buyer is strategic. The buyer assumes to know how to use stochastic dynamic programming to evaluate his/her expected profit and to find optimal purchasing timing. Then, it shows the existence of a unique subgame-perfect equilibrium pricing policy. (72) considers the model in which a fraction of buyers may decide to defer purchase in the hope of cheaper price in the future and there is a possibility that some customer will make purchase at higher price if the lower price is not available. However, any literature does not address the buyer's learning strategy in forecasting the future price in the market. Models for buyer's strategy which are introduced in the existing literature are pretty restrictive and unrealistic. So, we want to make more practical and reasonable assumption on the buyer's learning model.

3.3 Option Contract and Spot Market with Homogeneous Buyer's Learning

In Section 3.3, we consider the following case: there are single seller and many homogeneous buyers with market size of N in the following sense

$$N = \int_0^\infty d\mu$$

, where N is some positive number. We assumes that there are many buyers in the market and the effect of each buyer, $d\mu$, on the market is negligible and that each buyer has same demand and utility function as others in the market. Since the effect of each buyer on the market is negligible, each buyer thinks that the spot price does not depend on how many option he/she buy. Moreover, buyers think that the spot price does not depend on the demand level a. Moreover, the homogeneous buyer means that each buyer uses same objective function, forecasting method and demand as others in the market. So, each buyer's purchasing decision will be same as others. We consider the two-stage problem repeated in multiple periods where the option contract is made in the first stage and then the spot market is open in the second stage (Figure 8): At period n, in the first stage, the seller offers an option price π_n and strike price K_n to buyers. Then, buyers decide how many options to buy. However, the purchasing decision of options is based on how buyers forecast price in the spot market. As mentioned in Section 3.1, we use the notion of buyers' equally weighed experience over time. This means that buyers forecast the price in the spot market (open in the second stage) using the empirical distribution H_n constructed by the previously observed spot prices $\{p_0, p_1, ..., p_{n-1}\}$. For $p \geq 0$,

$$H_n(p) := \frac{1}{n-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} 1_{\{p_i \leq p\}}$$

So, the empirical distribution is defined as the probability distribution in which each previously observed price is equally weighted. In the second stage, the seller decides the spot price p_n for the good, and then buyers decide how many additional goods to buy in the spot market $q_{s,n}$ and how many options to exercise $q_{o,n}$, where $q_{o,n}$ is less than Q_n. Since this two-stage problem is repeated in multiple periods, buyers can observe one more spot price in every period so that they can update the empirical distribution in every period. Since this model setting is dynamic system, it naturally raises the following questions to be answered; (1) How would the seller's spot pricing decision be influenced by the option contracts in the first stage? (2) Does the sequence of the quantity of options bought by the buyer $\{Q_n\}_n$ converge to any finite limit? (3) If so, how can it be characterized and be compared with the equilibrium in the case where buyers know how the spot price will be decided by the seller? (4) What is the relationship of Q_∞ with H_∞ and the seller's spot pricing distribution at the limit?

3.3.1 Assumption

We assume that each buyer's utility function is quadratic and is given by

$$U(q) \equiv -\frac{1}{2b} q^2 + \frac{a}{b} q$$

This utility function is the revenue function of each buyer as retailer who is facing the linear demand from his/her own customer, $2a - 2bp$. Assume that there exist $M_1 < +\infty$ and $M_2 < +\infty$ such that $\int_0^\infty a dF(a) \leq M_1$ and $\int_0^\infty a^2 dF(a) \leq M_2$, and

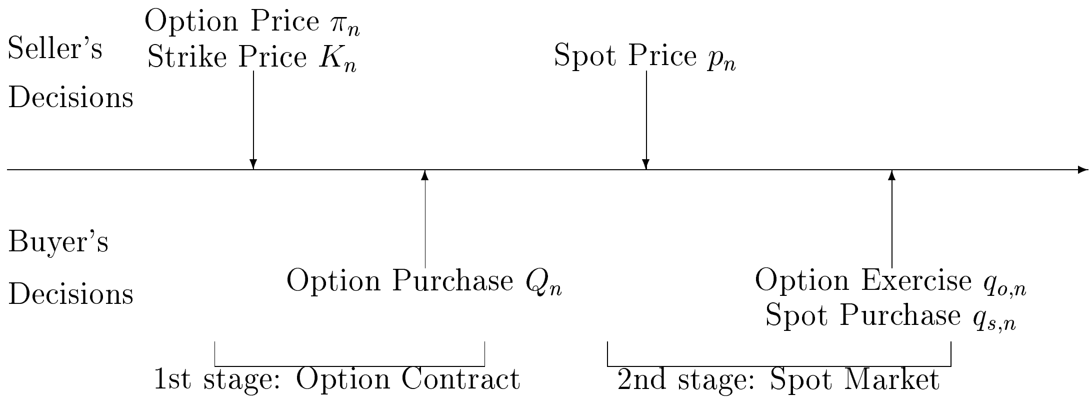


Figure 8: Timeline of decisions in period n

$F(a) = 0$ for all $a < bc$. With this realized demand in the second stage, the seller decide the spot price and then buyers decided how many additional goods to buy in the spot market, q_s, and how many options to exercise, q_o.

3.3.2 Buyers' problem in the second stage

As seen in Figure 8, in the second stage, given option price, π_n, strike, K_n, the quantity of options, Q_n and spot price, p_n, the buyers decide how many additional goods to purchase in the spot market, $q_{s,n}$, and how many options to exercise, $q_{o,n}$, to maximize his/her own profit function $R(q_{o,n}, q_{s,n})$; it is given by

$$\begin{aligned} R(q_{o,n}, q_{s,n}) &\equiv U(q_n) - K_n q_{o,n} - p_n q_{s,n} \\ &= U(q_n) - K_n q_{o,n} + (K_n - p_n) q_{s,n} \end{aligned}$$

, where $q_n = q_{o,n} + q_{s,n}$ is total realized demand. Theorem **??** characterizes the optimal quantity of goods to buy in the spot market, $q_{s,n}$, and the optimal quantity of options to exercise, $q_{o,n}$.

Theorem 1 *Suppose that each buyer's utility function, $U(q_n)$, is quadratic. Then, the optimal quantity of goods to buy through spot market, $q_{s,n}$, and the optimal quantity* *of options to exercise, $q_{o,n}$, are given by:*

$$q_n(p) = \begin{cases} q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = 0 + 0 & \text{if } \frac{a}{b} \le p \text{ and } \frac{a}{b} \le K_n \\ q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = 0 + (a - bp) & \text{if } p \le \frac{a}{b} \text{ and } p \le K_n \\ q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = (a - bK) + 0 & \text{if } \frac{a-Q}{b} \le K_n \le p \text{ and } K_n \le \frac{a}{b} \\ q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = Q + (a - bp - Q) & \text{if } K_n \le p \le \frac{a-Q}{b} \\ q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = Q + 0 & \text{if } K_n \le \frac{a-Q}{b} \le p \end{cases}$$

3.3.3 Buyers' problem in the first stage

In this section, we introduce the buyers' problem in the fist stage. As seen in Figure 8, given π_n and K_n, buyers solve their own problem to decide how many options, Q_n, to buy before knowing the demand. First, assume that buyers know the distribution function $F(\cdot)$ of a on Ω_F and estimates the spot price p_n using empirical distribution $H_n(\cdot)$ on Ω_{H_n}, where $\Omega_F := [0, \infty)$ and $\Omega_{H_n} := [0, \infty)$. Here, the empirical distribution, H_n, is constructed using the observed spot prices to forecast spot price p_n in the second stage. Then, each buyer solves the optimization problem to decide how many options, Q_n, to buy in period n:

$$\max_{Q \ge 0} \int_{\Omega_F} \int_{\Omega_{H_n}} U(q_n) - \pi_n Q - K_n q_{o,n} - p q_{s,n} dH_n(p) dF(a) \tag{91}$$

, where $q_n = q_{o_n} + q_{s_n}$. Given H_n and $Q \ge 0$, let the objective function be

$$f(H_n)(Q) \equiv \int_{\Omega_F} \int_{\Omega_{H_n}} U(q_n) - \pi_n Q - K_n q_{o,n} - p q_{s,n} dH_n(p) dF(a)$$

and let the function in integrations be

$$g(Q, a, p) \equiv U(q_n) - \pi_n Q - K_n q_{o,n} - p q_{s,n}$$

Since it is clear that we deal with the two-stage problem at period n, we will remove the index n of $\pi_n, K_n, q_n, q_{s,n}, q_{o,n}$ but not of H_n before Section 3.3.5. Now, without loosing the clarity, we will use π, K, q, q_s, q_o instead of $\pi_n, K_n, q_n, q_{s,n}, q_{o,n}$. Thus,

$$f(H_n)(Q) = \int_{\Omega_F} \Big(\int_{\Omega_{H_n}} g(Q, a, p) dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a) = \int_0^\infty \Big(\int_0^\infty g(Q, a, p) dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a)$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= & \int_0^{bK} \Big(\int_0^{\frac{a}{b}} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bp)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bp) - \pi Q - K0 - p(a-bp) dH_n(p) \\
& \quad + \int_{\frac{a}{b}}^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}0^2 + \frac{a}{b}0 - \pi Q - K0 - p0 dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{bK}^{Q+bK} \Big(\int_0^{K} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bp)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bp) - \pi Q - K0 - p(a-bp) dH_n(p) \\
& \quad + \int_K^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bK)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bK) - \pi Q - K(a-bK) \\
& \quad\quad -p(a-bK-a+bK) dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_0^{K} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bp)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bp) - \pi Q - K0 - p(a-bp) dH_n(p) \\
& \quad + \int_K^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bp)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bp) - \pi Q - KQ - p(a-bp-Q) dH_n(p) \\
& \quad + \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}Q^2 + \frac{a}{b}Q - \pi Q - KQ - p(Q-Q) dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

, where the last equality uses the Theorem 1. As you see above, $g(Q, a, p)$ is concave in Q for each $(a, p) \in \Omega_F \times \Omega_{H_n} = [0, \infty) \times [0, \infty)$. By rearranging $f(H_n)(Q)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f(H_n)(Q) \\
& = -\pi Q + \int_0^{bK} \int_0^{\frac{a}{b}} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bp)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bp) - p(a-bp) dH_n(p) dF(a) \\
& \quad + \int_{bK}^{Q+bK} \Big(\int_0^{K} (\frac{b}{2}p^2 - ap + \frac{a^2}{2b}) dH_n(p) + \int_K^{\infty} (\frac{a^2}{2b} - aK + \frac{bK^2}{2}) dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
& \quad + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_0^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (\frac{b}{2}p^2 - ap + \frac{a^2}{2b}) dH_n(p) - Q \cdot \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} p dH_n(p) \\
& \quad\quad + (\frac{a}{b}Q - \frac{Q^2}{2b}) \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} dH_n(p) + Q \cdot \int_K^{\infty} (p-K) dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
& = -\pi Q + \int_0^{bK} \int_0^{\frac{a}{b}} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bp)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bp) - p(a-bp) dH_n(p) dF(a) \\
& \quad + \int_{bK}^{Q+bK} \Big(\int_0^{K} (\frac{b}{2}p^2 - ap + \frac{a^2}{2b}) dH_n(p) + \int_K^{\infty} (\frac{a^2}{2b} - aK + \frac{bK^2}{2}) dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
& \quad + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_0^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (\frac{b}{2}p^2 - ap + \frac{a^2}{2b}) dH_n(p) + (\frac{a}{b}Q - \frac{Q^2}{2b}) \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} dH_n(p) \\
& \quad\quad - Q \cdot \int_K^{\infty} K dH_n(p) + Q \cdot \int_K^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} p dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Given any probability function $H(\cdot)$, the objective function, $f(H)(Q)$, is concave and moreover is differentiable for any $Q \geq 0$.

Lemma 1 *$f(H)(\cdot)$ is differentiable for all $Q \geq 0$ and any probability function H. Let $\nabla f(H)(Q)$ be the derivative of $f(H)(\cdot)$ at $Q \geq 0$. Then, for any $Q \geq 0$,*

$$\nabla f(H)(Q) = -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^{+} - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+} dH(p)dF(a)$$

So, the optimal solution, Q^*, is characterized by its derivative function as in Theorem 2.

Theorem 2 *Suppose that H_n is empirical distribution constructed by previous spot prices $\{p_1, p_2, ..., p_{n-1}\}$ and F are probability distribution function. Let Q_n^* be the optimal solution to each buyer's optimization problem (91). Then, if*

$$-\pi + \int_{bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^{+} - (p - \frac{a}{b})^{+} dH(p)dF(a) < 0$$

then $Q_n^* = 0$. Otherwise, there exists $Q_n^* \geq 0$ such that

$$0 \quad = \quad -\pi + \int_{Q_n^*+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^{+} - (p - \frac{a-Q_n^*}{b})^{+} dH(p)dF(a)$$

3.3.4 Seller's problem in the second stage

As seen in Figure 8, given total number of option bought by buyers in the first stage $\int_0^\infty Q_n d\mu$, the seller in the second stage should decide the spot price to offer to buyers. Let p be the spot price and $q(p)$ be the total demand from buyers. By Theorem **??**, the seller should solve the following problems,

$$\begin{array}{ll} \max & pq(p) - cq(p) \\ \text{subject to} & p \leq K \\ \max & p\Big(q(p) - q_o\Big) + Kq_o - cq(p) \\ \text{subject to} & K \leq p \end{array}$$

, where the first objective function does not have the revenue from the exercised options, Kq_o, since the spot price, p, is less than option strike price, K, and thus buyers do not have to exercise any option.

Theorem 3 *In period n, given realized a and $\int_0^\infty Q_n d\mu$, the seller decides the optimal spot price p_n such that*

$$p_n = \begin{cases} \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} & \textit{if } \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq K \\ \max[K, \frac{a-Q_n}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}] & \textit{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

As shown in Theorem 3, the optimal spot price, p_n, is a function of the number of options, Q_n, bought by the buyer in the first stage.

3.3.5 Seller's problem in the first stage with Fixed Option and Strike Price

In this section, we present the case where the seller fix the option price and strike price for all period $n \geq 1$. This means that the seller takes some constant $\pi \geq 0$ and $K \geq c$ so that, for all $n \geq 1$,

$$\pi_n = \pi \quad \text{and} \quad K_n = K$$

Then, we analyze the sequence of option, $\{Q_n\}_n$ and empirical distribution, $\{H_n\}_n$.

3.3.5.1 Sequence of option, $\{Q_n\}_n$ and empirical distribution, $\{H_n\}_n$

In this section, we introduce the useful properties of $\nabla f(H_n)(Q)$ and $\{Q_n\}_n$. Let $\mathcal{P}$ be the set of all probability distribution functions.

Lemma 2 *For any distribution function $H \in \mathcal{P}$,*

$$\nabla f(H)(Q) = -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^\infty \int_0^\infty (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p) dF(a)$$

is Lipschitz continuous and decreasing in $Q \geq 0$.

Lemma 3 *For all $H \in \mathcal{P}$, there exists constants $0 < C < +\infty$ such that*

$$\begin{aligned}\|\nabla f(H)(Q)\| &= \| -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p) dF(a) \| \\ &\leq C\end{aligned}$$

Lemma 4 *For all $n \geq 1$,*

$$\begin{aligned}\nabla f(H_n)(Q) &= -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH_n(p) dF(a) \\ &\leq -\pi + \int_{0}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q}{b} - K)^+ dF(a) \\ &\to -\pi\end{aligned}$$

as $Q \to +\infty$. So, $\{Q_n\}_n$ is bounded for all $n \geq 1$.

By Lemma 3, let's define

$$A(Q)(p) := \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{\max[K, \frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}] \leq p\}} dF(a)$$

as the actual probability distribution of spot price. Then, it is well ordered in the stochastic sense.

Lemma 5 *For $0 \leq Q_1 < Q_2$, $A(Q_1) \geq_{st} A(Q_2)$. This implies that $A(Q)$ is stochastically decreasing as Q increases.*

Lemma 6

$$\nabla f(A(Q))(Q) = -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dA(Q)(p) dF(a) \to -\pi$$

as $Q \to +\infty$.

By Lemma 6, we can define

$$\overline{Q} := \inf\{Q \geq 0 : -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dA(Q)(p) dF(a) \leq -\frac{1}{2}\pi\}$$

and $\overline{Q}$ is finite. Obviously, for all $Q \in [0, \overline{Q}]$,

$$\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^{+} - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+} dA(Q)(p) dF(a) \neq 0$$

Lemma 7

$$\nabla f(A(Q))(Q) = -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^{+} - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+} dA(Q)(p) dF(a)$$

is Lipschitz continuous in $Q \geq 0$ and strictly decreasing in $Q \in [0, \overline{Q}]$. So, if $\nabla f(A(0))(0) > 0$, there exists $Q^* \in [0, \overline{Q}]$ such that

$$\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) = -\pi + \int_{Q^*+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^{+} - (p - \frac{a-Q^*}{b})^{+} dA(Q^*)(p) dF(a) = 0$$

Actual probability distribution of spot price $A(Q)$ is a function of the quantity of options bought by the buyer Q. So, we have sequence of actual probability distribution of spot price $\{A(Q_n)\}_n$ as we have $\{Q_n\}_n$. Then, we have the following result.

Lemma 8 *Suppose that Q_n converges to finite limit Q^*. Then $A(Q_n)$ converges weakly to $A(Q^*)$.*

As mentioned above, in each period n, actual probability distribution of spot price $A(Q_n)$ is a function of Q_n, and Q_n is decided with empirical distribution H_n which depends on the previous spot prices $p_1, ..., p_{n-1}$. So, $A(Q_n)$ is a function of $p_1, ..., p_{n-1}$. Thus $A(Q_n)$ is not independent and not identical with $A(Q_m)$ for $m \neq n$. However, we have the following general version of Glivenko-Cantelli Theorem.

Lemma 9 *Suppose that $A(Q_n)$ converges weakly to $A(Q^*)$. Then H_n converges weakly to H^*.*

3.3.5.2 Convergence Result

As already mentioned, the buyer keeps learning the seller's pricing policy by observing all the previous seller's pricing decisions, sine the buyer does not know how the spot price will be decided. This implies that the buyer does not know that the spot price decided by the seller depends on the demand level, a, and the number of options Q_n decided by the buyer. Moreover, out model setting is the Stackelberg strategic game in which the leader is the buyer and then the follower is the seller. So, with this buyer's behavior in the Stackelberg strategic game, there exists a Nash-equilibrium of the buyer's and seller's decision, which are the number of option and the spot price, respectively.

Theorem 4 *Suppose that the buyer does not know that the spot price depends on the realized demand level, a, and the number of options decided by the buyer. Then, there exists a Nash-equilibrium* $(Q^*, p(a, Q^*))$ *such that*

$$-\pi + \int_{Q^*+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q^*}{b})^+ dA(Q^*)(p) dF(a) = 0$$

and

$$p(Q^*) = \begin{cases} \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} & \text{if } \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq K \\ \max[K, \frac{a-Q^*}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}] & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

In this section, we see whether the sequence Q_n converges to Nash-equilibrium, Q^*. Lemma 10, Lemma 11, Lemma 12, Lemma 13, Lemma 14 and Lemma 15 are technical results necessary to prove the main convergent result which is Theorem **??**.

Lemma 10 *For all* $p \geq 0$,

$$H_n(p) - \frac{1}{n}\sum_{i=1}^{n} A(Q_i)(p) \to 0$$

w.p.1.

Lemma 11 *Suppose that, for* $\widetilde{p} < +\infty$ *and* $\widetilde{Q} := \inf\{Q : A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) = 1\} < +\infty$,

$$\frac{n_j^=}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^=}\sum_{i=1, Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})\Big) + \frac{n_j^<}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^<}\sum_{i=1, Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})\Big)$$
$$\to \quad A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})$$

, *where* $n_j^= := \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})=1\}} = \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{Q_i \geq \widetilde{Q}\}}$ *and* $n_j^< := \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})<1\}} = \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{Q_i < \widetilde{Q}\}}$ *and thus* $n_j = n_j^= + n_j^<$. *Then, for all* $\epsilon \in (0,1)$,

$$\frac{n_j(\epsilon)}{n_j} \to 1$$

, *where* $n_j(\epsilon) := \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \geq A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) - \epsilon\}}$.

Lemma 12 $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ *is continuous at* p. *For some* $\epsilon(p) \in (0, A(\widetilde{Q})(p))$, *suppose that*

$$\frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(\widetilde{Q})(p) + \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) \quad < \quad A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p)$$

Then, there exists $\delta \in (0, \epsilon(p))$ *and subsequence* $\{A(Q_{m_o})(p)\}_o$ *such that for all* $o \geq 1$

$$A(Q_{m_o})(p) < A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta$$

and there exists $\epsilon_1 \in (0,1)$ *subsequence* $\{n_{j_{k_l}}\}_l$ *such that for all* $l \geq 1$

$$\epsilon_1 < \frac{T(n_{j_{k_l}})}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \leq 1$$

, *where* $T(n_{j_{k_l}}) := \max\{o \geq 1 : m_o \leq n_{j_{k_l}}\}$

Lemma 13 *Suppose that there exists subsequence* $\{H_{n_j}\}_j$ *of* $\{H_n\}_n$ *and* H *such that* $H_{n_j}(p) \to H(p)$ *for all* p *and* $\widetilde{p} \equiv \inf\{p : H(p) = 1\} < +\infty$. *Then, for all* $p \geq 0$ *where* $H(\cdot)$ *is continuous,* $H(p) \geq A(\widetilde{Q})(p)$, *where* $\widetilde{Q} = \inf\{Q : A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) = 1\}$.

Let's define $\nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^-$ and $\nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^+$ such that for $h > 0$,

$$\begin{aligned} \nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^- &:= \nabla f(H)(Q) - \nabla f(H)(Q-h) \\ \nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^+ &:= \nabla f(H)(Q) - \nabla f(H)(Q+h) \end{aligned}$$

Suppose that Q^* is a solution such that $\nabla f(H)(Q) = 0$. Then, if $\nabla^2 f(Q^*,H,h)^- < 0$ and $\nabla^2 f(Q^*,H,h)^+ > 0$ for all $h > 0$, then $\nabla f(H)(Q) = 0$ has unique solution at Q^*. If not, then $\nabla f(H)(Q)$ has multiple solutions around Q^*.

Lemma 14 *For $h > 0$, suppose that $\{a \leq Q + bK + h : F(Q+bK) < F(a)\} \neq \emptyset$. Then,*

$$\nabla^2 f(Q, H, h)^+ = 0 \quad \textit{iff} \quad H(K) = 1$$

Suppose that $\{a \leq Q + bK + h : F(Q+bK) < F(a)\} = \emptyset$.

$$\nabla^2 f(Q, H, h)^+ = 0 \quad \textit{iff} \quad H(\frac{\overline{a} - Q - h}{b}) = 1$$

, where $\overline{a} := \inf\{a : F(Q + bK + h) < F(a)\}$.

For $h > 0$, suppose that $\{a \leq Q + bK : F(Q + bK - h) < F(a)\} \neq \emptyset$. Then,

$$\nabla^2 f(Q, H, h)^- = 0 \quad \textit{iff} \quad H(K) = 1$$

Suppose that $\{a \leq Q + bK : F(Q + bK - h) < F(a)\} = \emptyset$. Then,

$$\nabla^2 f(Q, H, h)^- = 0 \quad \textit{iff} \quad H(\frac{\widehat{a} - Q}{b}) = 1$$

, where $\widehat{a} := \inf\{a : F(Q + bK) < F(a)\}$.

Define the linear combination of real-valued functions, $f_i : \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R}$ for $i = 1, ..., n$ as follows; for any $x \in \mathbb{R}$ and $a_i \in \mathbb{R}$ for $i = 1, ..., n$

$$(\sum_{i=1}^{n} a_i f_i)(x) := \sum_{i=1}^{n} a_i f_i(x)$$

So, for all $Q \geq 0$,

$$\begin{aligned}
& \nabla f(H_{n+1})(Q) \\
= \; & -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH_{n+1}(p) dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ d\big(H_n(p) + \frac{1}{n+1}(1_{\{s_{n+1} \leq p\}} - H_n(p))\big) dF(a) \\
= \; & \nabla f(H_n)(Q) + \frac{1}{n+1}\Big(\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \leq p\}})(Q) - \nabla f(H_n)(Q)\Big) \\
= \; & \nabla f(H_n)(Q) + \frac{1}{n+1}\Big(\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \leq p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)\Big)(Q) \\
= \; & \Big(\nabla f(H_n) + \frac{1}{n+1}\Big(\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \leq p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)\Big)\Big)(Q)
\end{aligned}$$

,where second equality holds since $H_{n+1}(p) = H_n(p) + \frac{1}{n+1}(1_{\{s_{n+1} \le p\}} - H_n(p)$. Lemma 15 is used to prove Theorem 5, called a "Super-martingale" Type Lemma. (9)

Lemma 15 *Suppose that Z_n, B_n, C_n and D_n are finite, non-negative random variables, adopted to the σ-field $\mathcal{F}_n$, which satisfy*

$$E[Z_{n+1}|\mathcal{F}_n] \le (1 + B_n)Z_n - C_n + D_n$$

and

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} B_n < \infty, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} D_n < \infty$$

Then, we have

$$Z_n \to Z < \infty \;\; a.s. \quad and \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} C_n < \infty \;\; a.s.$$

Theorem 5 *Suppose that there exists $Q^* \ge 0$ such that*

$$\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) \equiv -\pi + \int_{Q^*+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a - Q^*}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

Then, $\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) \to 0$ w.p.1

Theorem 6 *Suppose that there exists $Q^* \ge 0$ at which*

$$\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) \equiv -\pi + \int_{Q^*+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a - Q^*}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

and there exist $\underline{Q}^*$ and $\overline{Q}^*$ with $\underline{Q}^* \le \overline{Q}^*$ such that $Q^* \in [\underline{Q}^*, \overline{Q}^*]$ and for all $Q \in [\underline{Q}^*, \overline{Q}^*]$

$$\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q) := -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a - Q}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

Then, for any $\varepsilon > 0$, there exists $N(\varepsilon) < +\infty$ such that for all $n \ge N(\varepsilon)$

$$Q_n \in [\underline{Q}^* - \varepsilon, \overline{Q}^* + \varepsilon]$$

Corollary 1 *Suppose that there exists $Q^* \geq 0$ at which*

$$\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) \equiv -\pi + \int_{Q^*+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

and Q^* is the unique solution to

$$\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q) := -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

Then, Q_n converges to Q^*.

Corollary 2 *If $\nabla f(A(0))(0) < 0$, then, Q_n converges to 0.*

3.3.6 Seller's problem in the first stage with Updating Option Price

In previous section, we present the case in which the seller offers a fixed option price in every period but in this section we consider the case in which the seller updates the option price by maximizing his/her profit function. As seen in Figure 8, the number of options bought by the buyer is decided based on the option price provided by the seller, and thus, in the first stage of every period, the seller needs to estimate how many options the buyer would buy given the option price. To estimate the number of options, it is assumed that the seller knows the buyer's option purchasing policy, which means that the seller knows that the buyer use the empirical distribution, H_n. Given estimated options, Q, the seller decides the option price, π by fixing the strike, K to marginal cost, c so that π is a function of Q. Additionally, we assume that for any $x < y$ with $0 < F(x)$ and $F(y) < 1$

$$F(x) < F(y)$$

This gives the sufficient condition under which the buyer's optimization problem has unique solution. Then, the seller solve the following problem to decide π by estimating Q.

$$\max \qquad \int_0^{\infty} (\pi Q + Kq_o + pq_s - cq)dF(a)$$

$$\text{subject to} \quad -\pi + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) = 0$$
$$\pi \geq 0$$

The objective function can be rewritten as follows,

$$\begin{aligned}
& \int_0^{\infty} (\pi Q + Kq_o + pq_s - cq)dF(a) \\
= & \int_0^{\infty} (\pi Q + cq_o + pq_s - cq)dF(a) \\
= & \int_0^{bc} \pi Q + c0 + c(0-0) - c0 dF(a) \\
& + \int_{bc}^{Q+bc} \pi Q + cQ + \max[\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}, c](\max[a - b\max[\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}, c], Q] - Q) \\
& \qquad -c\max[a - b\max[\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}, c], Q]dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} \pi Q + cQ + \max[\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}, c](\max[a - b\max[\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}, c], Q] - Q) \\
& \qquad -c\max[a - b\max[\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}, c], Q]dF(a) \\
= & \int_0^{bc} \pi Q + c0 + c(0-0) - c0 dF(a) \\
& + \int_{bc}^{Q+bc} \pi Q + cQ + c(\max[a - bc, Q] - Q) - c\max[a-bc, Q]dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} \pi Q + cQ + (\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2})(\max[a - b(\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}), Q] - Q) \\
& \qquad -c\max[a - b(\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}), Q]dF(a) \\
= & \pi Q + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} b(\frac{a-Q}{2b} - \frac{c}{2})^2 dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

So, we have

$$\max \quad \pi Q + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} b(\frac{a-Q}{2b} - \frac{c}{2})^2 dF(a) \tag{92}$$
$$\text{subject to} \quad -\pi + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) = 0$$
$$\pi \geq 0$$

Equivalently, we have

$$\max_{\pi \geq 0} \quad Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} b(\frac{a-Q}{2b} - \frac{c}{2})^2 dF(a)$$

Since the seller knows exactly how many options the buyer would buy, the number of options bought by the buyer, Q_n, is equal to the number of options estimated by the seller. So, we don't have to solve the buyer's problem anymore to obtain the number of options in each period. From now on, we focus on the analysis of the seller's problem in the first stage.

Lemma 16 *For all $Q \geq 0$,*

$$Q \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} \{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}\} dH(p) dF(a) + \frac{b}{4} \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q}{b} - c)^2 dF(a)$$

is continuous.

Lemma 17 *For all $Q_1 < Q_2$,*

$$\begin{aligned}
& |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} Q_1 \{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^{+}\} dH(p) dF(a) + \frac{b}{4} \int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q_1}{b} - c)^2 dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} Q_2 \{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_2}{b})^{+}\} dH(p) dF(a) - \frac{b}{4} \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q_2}{b} - c)^2 dF(a)| \\
\leq & \Big(\frac{3|Q_2 - Q_1| + 3E(a) + 4Q_2}{2b}\Big) |Q_1 - Q_2|
\end{aligned}$$

Lemma 18 *Suppose that $\int_0^\infty a^2 dF(a) < \infty$. For any $Q \geq 0$ and any $H \in \mathcal{P}(\mathbb{R})$*

$$\begin{aligned}
& Q \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} \{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}\} dH(p) dF(a) + \frac{b}{4} \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q}{b} - c)^2 dF(a) \\
\leq & \int_{0}^{\infty} (\frac{a-bc-Q}{b})^{+} (\frac{3Q+a-bc}{4}) dF(a) \\
\to & \ 0
\end{aligned}$$

,as $Q \to \infty$.

Define $\bar{Q}$ such that

$$\widetilde{Q} := \sup\{Q \geq 0 : \int_0^\infty (\frac{a-bc-Q}{b})^{+} (\frac{3Q+a-bc}{4}) dF(a) \geq \frac{b}{8} \int_{bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a}{b} - c)^2 dF(a)\}$$

Then, by Lemma 18, $\widetilde{Q} < +\infty$ and $Q_n \leq \widetilde{Q}$ for all $n \geq 1$.

Theorem 7 *Suppose that Q_n is the optimizer for (92). If Q_n converges to Q^*, then Q^* is the optimizer for*

$$\begin{aligned}
\max \quad & Q\pi + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2 dF(a) \\
\textit{subject to} \quad & \pi = \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) \\
& Q \geq 0
\end{aligned}$$

By Theorem 7, we need to find the candidate point for Q^* to which the Q_n can converges. This is introduced in Lemma 19 and Theorem 8.

Lemma 19 *Fix $Q^* > 0$. Suppose that a is random variable with probability distribution function $F(\cdot)$ such that $F(bc) < 1$ and $F(x)$ is strictly increasing for $bc \leq x \leq \bar{Q} + bc$ and Q^{**} is the optimizer for*

$$\begin{aligned}
\max \quad & Q\pi + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2 dF(a) \\
\textit{subject to} \quad & \pi = \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) \\
& Q \geq 0
\end{aligned}$$

Then, $Q^{**} \neq Q^*$.

Theorem 8 *For $Q^* = 0$, suppose that a is random variable with probability distribution function $F(\cdot)$ such that $F(bc) < 1$ and $F(x)$ is strictly increasing for $bc \leq x \leq \bar{Q} + bc$ and that Q^{**} is the optimizer for*

$$\begin{aligned}
\max \quad & Q\pi + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2 dF(a) \\
\textit{subject to} \quad & \pi = \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) \\
& Q \geq 0
\end{aligned}$$

Then, there exists probability distribution $F(\cdot)$ such that $Q^{**} = Q^* = 0$.

Theorem 8 provides the equilibrium which can be possible limit point of $\{Q_n\}_n$. The following example shows that there exists probability distribution such that, for any $Q^* \geq 0$, $Q^{**} \neq Q^*$.

Example 1 *Suppose that a is random variable with probability distribution function, $F(\cdot)$ such that*

$$F(x) = \begin{cases} \frac{x}{2000} & 0 \leq x < 200 \\ \frac{1}{2} + \frac{x-200}{1000} & 200 \leq x < 300 \\ 1 & x = 300 \end{cases}$$

and that Q^{**} is the optimizer for

$$\begin{array}{ll} \max & Q\pi + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q}{b} - c)^2 dF(a) \\ \textit{subject to} & \pi = \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty} \{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+\} dA(Q^*)(p) dF(a) \\ & Q \geq 0 \end{array}$$

and $b = 1$ and $c = 50$. Then, there does not any $Q^* \geq 0$ such that $Q^{**} = Q^*$.

Theorem 9 *Suppose that a is random variable with probability distribution function $F(\cdot)$ such that $F(bc) < 1$ and $F(x)$ is strictly increasing for $bc \leq x \leq \bar{Q} + bc$ and*

$$Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty} (p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dA(0)(p) dF(a) + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q}{b} - c)^2 dF(a)$$

is maximized uniquely at $Q = 0$. Then, Q_n converges to 0.

3.4 *Option Contract and Spot Market Without Buyer's Learning*

3.4.1 Single Seller and Single Smart Buyer

So far, we assume that the buyer doest not know the seller's pricing policy but knows the previous information about the seller's pricing decisions so that he/she forecasts the seller's pricing decision with the empirical distribution which is constructed by the previously observed spot prices. In this section, we assume that the buyer is smart enough to know how the seller decides the spot price. This means that the buyer knows that the spot price is a function of a and Q. Then, we have the profit function for the buyer in the first stage and one for the seller in the second stage.

$$\begin{aligned} f_{Buyer}(Q, p(a,Q)) &\equiv \int_o^\infty -\frac{1}{2b}q^2 + \frac{a}{b}q - \pi Q - Kq_o - p(a,Q)q_s dF(a) \\ f_{Seller}(Q, p(a,Q)) &\equiv p(a,Q)q_s + Kq_o - cq \end{aligned}$$

where $q = q_o + q_s$ and F is the probability distribution function for a. By Theorem 3, p is the function of a and Q,

$$p(a,Q) = \begin{cases} \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} & \text{if } \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq K \\ \max[K, \frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}] & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

Now, solve the buyer's problem,

$$max_{Q \geq 0} f_{Buyer}(Q) \equiv \int_0^\infty -\frac{1}{2b}q^2 + \frac{a}{b}q - \pi Q - Kq_o - p(a,Q)q_s dF(a)$$

Lemma 20

$$f_{Buyer}(Q) \equiv \int_0^\infty -\frac{1}{2b}q^2 + \frac{a}{b}q - \pi Q - Kq_o - p(a,Q)q_s dF(a)$$

is concave in $Q \geq 0$ *and*

$$\begin{aligned} & f_{Buyer}(Q+h) - f_{Buyer}(Q) \\ & \in \begin{cases} h\Big(- \pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty \frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b} - KdF(a)\Big) & \\ - \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty \frac{3}{8b}h^2 dF(a) - [0, \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \frac{(K-c)h}{2} - \frac{3h^2}{8b}dF(a)] & \text{for } 0 < h \leq \frac{2}{3}b(K-c) \\ h\Big(- \pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty \frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b} - KdF(a)\Big) & \\ - \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty \frac{3}{8b}h^2 dF(a) - [0, \frac{1}{6}b(K-c)^2] & \text{for } h > \frac{2}{3}b(K-c) \end{cases} \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} & f_{Buyer}(Q) - f_{Buyer}(Q-h) \\ & \in h\Big(- \pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty \frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b} - KdF(a)\Big) \\ & + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty \frac{3}{8b}h^2 dF(a) + [0, \int_{Q+2bK-bc-h}^{Q+2bK-bc} \frac{1}{2}(K-c)h + \frac{3}{8b}h^2 dF(a)] \qquad \text{for } h > 0 \end{aligned}$$

Theorem 10 *Suppose that a has probability distribution function F and the buyer knows the seller's pricing policy. Then, there exist equilibrium $(Q_{E,S}, p(a, Q_{E,S}))$ such that $Q_{E,S} \in [Q_l, Q_u]$ if there exists constant $c \le 0$ such that*

$$\lim_{Q \uparrow Q_l} -\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{(3a-3Q+bc)}{4b} - KdF(a) + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q_l+2bK-bc} \frac{1}{2}(K-c)dF(a) \ge 0$$
$$-\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{(3a-3Q+bc)}{4b} - KdF(a) = c \quad \forall Q \in [Q_l, Q_u]$$

and

$$p(a, Q_{E,S}) = \begin{cases} \frac{a+bc}{2b} & \text{if } \frac{a+bc}{2b} \le K \\ \max[K, \frac{a-Q_{E,S}+bc}{2b}] & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

, where a has the probability distribution function F.

3.4.2 Single Seller and Multiple Buyers

In section 3.4.1, the single seller and single buyer are considered and it is assumed that the buyer knows the seller's pricing policy. This section introduces many homogeneous buyers with market size of N as introduced in Section 3.3. However, in this section, we assume that each buyers know that the spot price depends on demand level a. This implies that the buyer is less smart than the one introduced in Section 3.4.1. In the second stage, the seller decides the spot price given the number of options bought by the buyers in the first stage. Let Q_S be the number of options bought by a single buyer and thus $Q_S d\mu$ be the portion of a single buyer in the market. Now, the buyer's and the seller's objective function in the first stage and in the second stage are

$$\begin{aligned} f_{Buyer}(Q) &\equiv \int_0^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}q^2 + \frac{a}{b}q - \pi Q - Kq_o - p(a)q_s dF(a) \\ f_{Seller}(Q, p(a,Q)) &\equiv p(a,Q)q_s + Kq_o - cq \end{aligned}$$

, where $p(a)$ is the spot price as function of a. By Theorem 3 in section 3.3.4, p is the function of a and Q_S,

$$p(a, Q_S) = \begin{cases} \frac{a+bc}{2b} & \text{if } \frac{a+bc}{2b} \le K \\ \max[K, \frac{a-Q_S+bc}{2b}] & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

, where total demand is $\int_0^\infty a - bpd\mu = Na - Nbp$.

Theorem 11 *Suppose that a has probability distribution function F, there are multiple buyers in the market, each buyer's portion in the market is $d\mu$ and each buyer does not know the seller's pricing policy. $(Q_{E,M}, p(a, Q_{E,M}))$ is the equilibrium such that*

$$-\pi + \int_{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} - KdF(a) = 0$$

$$p(a, Q_{E,M}) = \begin{cases} \frac{a+bc}{2b} & if\ \frac{a+bc}{2b} \leq K \\ \max[K, \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}] & otherwise \end{cases}$$

, where a has the probability distribution function F.

3.5 Comparisons

In this section, we compare the number of options bought by the buyer in the following three cases; (1) the limit of number of option Q^* when the buyer tries to learn the spot price distribution (2) the equilibrium $Q_{E,S}$ when the buyer is smart enough to know the seller's pricing policy and (3) the equilibrium $Q_{E,M}$ when the buyer just takes a spot price as given. Theorem 12 shows that the more information the buyer has about the seller's pricing policy, the more options the buyer would buy as the best response.

Theorem 12

$$Q^* \leq Q_{E,M} \leq Q_{E,S}$$

3.6 Option Contract and Spot Market with Heterogeneous Buyer's Learning

In this section, we will consider same problem introduced in the previous sections except that buyers are not homogeneous but heterogeneous. Heterogeneous buyers means that each buyer's demand is different from others in the following sense. In addition to the demand level a in the market, each buyer has another demand fluctuation ϕ which is independent of demand level α, has a probability distribution $\frac{G(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}$ with a finite support $[\phi_1, \phi_2]$ and $E[\phi] = \int_{\Omega_G} \phi d\frac{G(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)} = 0$. This implies that $dG(\phi)$ is the market proportion of buyer who has ϕ of demand fluctuation and $\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)$ is total size of buyers in the market. We consider two possible points when this demand fluctuation ϕ is realized; (1) it is realized when buyers make their second decision, which is how many options to exercise and how many additional products to buy in the spot market (Section 3.6.1), or (2) it is realized when buyers make their first decision, which is how many options to buy (Section 3.6.2).

3.6.1 Buyers' demand fluctuation, ϕ, is realized in the second stage

In this case, the only difference from previous sections is that we should use another demand level considering each buyer's demand fluctuation ϕ. So, instead of probability distribution F of demand level a, we should use probability distribution $\bar{F}$ of $\bar{a} = a + \phi$ which is the convolution of a and ϕ. Then, all the results hold for probability distribution $\bar{F}$ used as demand level by the seller's and buyers' objective function. Buyers' problems in the first and second stage at period n are

$$\max_{Q \geq 0} \int_{\Omega_F} \int_{\Omega_{H_n}} U(q_n) - \pi_n Q - K_n q_{o,n} - p q_{s,n} dH_n(p) d\bar{F}(a)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} R(q_{o,n}, q_{s,n}) &\equiv U(q_n) - K_n q_{o,n} - p_n q_{s,n} \\ &= U(q_n) - K_n q_{o,n} + (K_n - p_n) q_{s,n} \end{aligned}$$

where $q_n = q_{o_n} + q_{s_n}$ and

$$U(q) \equiv -\frac{1}{2b} q^2 + \frac{\bar{a}}{b} q$$

After solving buyers' problem in the first stage, total number of option buyers purchased is $\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n dG(\phi) = Q_n \int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)$, since each buyer purchases the same number

Q_n of option as others in the market. Seller's problems in the first and second stage at period n are

$$\begin{array}{ll} \max & \int_0^\infty (\pi Q + Kq_{o,n} + pq_{s,n} - cq)d\bar{F}(a) \\ \text{subject to} & -\pi + \int_{Q+bc}^\infty \int_0^\infty (p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH_n(p)d\bar{F}(a) = 0 \\ & \pi \geq 0 \end{array}$$

and

$$\begin{array}{rl} \max & pq(p) - cq(p) \\ \text{subject to} & p \leq K \\ \max & p\Big(q(p) - q_{o,n}\Big) + Kq_{o,n} - cq(p) \\ \text{subject to} & K \leq p \end{array}$$

where $q(p) = \bar{a} - bp$ and $q_o \in [0, Q_n \int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)]$. Since $\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)$ assumes to be finite, let $\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)$ be equal to N. Then, all the results in previous sections hold.

3.6.2 Buyers' demand fluctuation, ϕ, is realized in the first stage

In the section, we assume that ϕ is realized just before buyers decide how many options to buy in the first stage. In the following sections, seller's buyer's problems in each stage are analyzed.

3.6.2.1 Buyers' problem in the second stage

The buyer who faces the demand level a and the demand fluctuation ϕ has the following utility function in the second stage

$$U(q) \equiv -\frac{1}{2b}q^2 + \frac{a+\phi}{b}q \tag{93}$$

Theorem 13 *Suppose that buyer facing demand fluctuation ϕ has utility function, $U(q_n)$, is given as (93). Then, the optimal quantity of goods to buy through spot* *market, $q_{s,n}$, and the optimal quantity of options to exercise, $q_{o,n}$, are given by:*

$$q_n(p) = \begin{cases} q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = 0 + 0 & \text{if } \frac{a+\phi}{b} \leq p \text{ and } \frac{a+\phi}{b} \leq K_n \\ q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = 0 + (a + \phi - bp) & \text{if } p \leq \frac{a+\phi}{b} \text{ and } p \leq K_n \\ q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = (a + \phi - bK) + 0 & \text{if } \frac{a+\phi-Q}{b} \leq K_n \leq p \text{ and } K_n \leq \frac{a+\phi}{b} \\ q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = Q + (a + \phi - bp - Q) & \text{if } K_n \leq p \leq \frac{a+\phi-Q}{b} \\ q_{o_n} + q_{s_n} = Q + 0 & \text{if } K_n \leq \frac{a+\phi-Q}{b} \leq p \end{cases}$$

Proof. Same proof as in Theorem 1 is used with $a + \phi$ instead of a. □

3.6.2.2 Buyers' problem in the first stage

Since ϕ is realized in the first stage, the buyer who faces ϕ has the following problem

$$\max_{Q \geq 0} \int_{\Omega_F} \int_{\Omega_{H_n}} U(q_n) - \pi_n Q - K_n q_{o,n} - p q_{s,n} dH_n(p) dF(a) \qquad (94)$$

where $q_n = q_{o_n} + q_{s_n}$ and $U(q_n)$ is given by (93). Again, let $f_\phi(H_n)(Q) = \int_{\Omega_F} \int_{\Omega_{H_n}} U(q_n) - \pi_n Q - K_n q_{o,n} - p q_{s,n} dH_n(p) dF(a)$ be the objective function for the buyer who has ϕ demand fluctuation and thus the objective function $f_\phi(H_n)(Q)$ is equal to

$$\begin{aligned}
&\int_0^{bK} \Big(\int_0^{\frac{a+\phi}{b}} -\frac{1}{2b}(a+\phi-bp)^2 + \frac{a+\phi}{b}(a+\phi-bp) - \pi Q - K0 - p(a+\phi-bp) dH_n(p) \\
&\qquad + \int_{\frac{a+\phi}{b}}^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}0^2 + \frac{a+\phi}{b}0 - \pi Q - K0 - p0 dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
+ \; &\int_{bK}^{Q+bK} \Big(\int_0^{K} -\frac{1}{2b}(a+\phi-bp)^2 + \frac{a+\phi}{b}(a+\phi-bp) - \pi Q - K0 - p(a+\phi-bp) dH_n(p) \\
&\quad + \int_K^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}(a+\phi-bK)^2 + \frac{a+\phi}{b}(a+\phi-bK) - \pi Q - K(a+\phi-bK) \\
&\quad - p(a+\phi-bK-a+bK) dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
+ \; &\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_0^{K} -\frac{1}{2b}(a+\phi-bp)^2 + \frac{a+\phi}{b}(a-bp) - \pi Q - K0 - p(a+\phi-bp) dH_n(p) \\
&\quad + \int_K^{\frac{a+\phi-Q}{b}} -\frac{1}{2b}(a+\phi-bp)^2 + \frac{a+\phi}{b}(a+\phi-bp) - \pi Q - KQ - p(a+\phi-bp-Q) dH_n(p) \\
&\quad + \int_{\frac{a+\phi-Q}{b}}^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}Q^2 + \frac{a+\phi}{b}Q - \pi Q - KQ - p(Q-Q) dH_n(p) \Big) dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

Since this is concave and differentiable, the first derivative can be used to find the optimal number of option the buyer purchases in the first stage and is given

$$\nabla f_\phi(H_n)(Q) = -\pi + \int_{Q-\phi+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a-(Q-\phi)}{b}\right)^+ dH(p)dF(a)$$

Lemma 21 *Suppose that the buyer who has demand fluctuation* 0 *purchases* $[Q_n]^+$ *of options, where*

$$-\pi + \int_{Q_n+bc}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q_n}{b})^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) = 0$$

Then, the buyer who has demand fluctuation $\phi \neq 0$ *purchases* $[Q_n + \phi]^+$.

By Lemma 21, total number of options bought by buyers at period n is $\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi) = \int_{\Omega_G} [Q_n + \phi]^+ dG(\phi)$ if the buyer who has zero demand fluctuation purchases $Q_n(0) = [Q_n]^+$ of options.

3.6.2.3 Seller's problem in the second stage

Demand level a is realized, total demand fluctuation is $\int_{\Omega_G} \phi dG(\phi) = 0$ and total number of option purchased by buyers in the first stage is $\int_{\Omega_G} [Q_n + \phi]^+ dG(\phi)$. With these information, the seller's problem in the second stage is given as

$$\begin{aligned} \max \quad & pq(p) - cq(p) \\ \text{subject to} \quad & p \le K \\ \max \quad & p\Big(q(p) - q_{o,n}\Big) + Kq_{o,n} - cq(p) \\ \text{subject to} \quad & K \le p \end{aligned}$$

where $q(p) = a + \int_{\Omega_G} \phi dG(\phi) - bp = a - bp$ and $q_o \in [0, \int_{\Omega_G} [Q_n + \phi]^+ dG(\phi)]$.

Theorem 14 *In period* n, *the seller's optimal spot price* p_n *is given as*

$$p_n = \begin{cases} \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} & \textit{if } \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \le K \\ \max[K, \frac{a - \frac{\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}] & \textit{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

where $Q_n(\phi) = [Q_n + \phi]^+$ *and* $[Q_n]^+$ *is the optimal number of options bought by the buyer facing zero demand fluctuation such that*

$$-\pi_n + \int_{Q_n+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q_n}{b})^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) = 0$$

By Theorem 14, the actual probability distribution of spot price is given as

$$A(Q)(p) \quad := \quad \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\ge K\}} 1_{\{\max[K, \frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}]\le p\}} dF(a)$$

Then, it is again stochastically decreasing in Q, since for $Q_1 < Q_2$

$$\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_1+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)} < \frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_2+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}$$

and

$$\max[K, \frac{a - \frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_1+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}] \ge \max[K, \frac{a - \frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_2+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}]$$

3.6.2.4 Seller's problem in the first stage with fixed option and strike price

First, we need to find the equilibrium point to which the sequence $\{Q_n(\phi)\}_n$ can converge and can use the following result.

Lemma 22 *The first derivative of buyer's objective function who has* ϕ *demand fluctuation is given as*

$$\nabla f_\phi(A(Q))(Q) = -\pi + \int_{Q-\phi+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a-(Q-\phi)}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q)(p)dF(a)$$

is Lipschitz continuous and strictly decreasing in Q.

Now, we have the following results which are the corresponding results to Theorem 5, Theorem 6 and Corollary 1 without demand fluctuation ϕ. Theorem 15, Theorem 16 and Corollary 3 can be proved using the same procedure as Theorem 5, Theorem 6 and Corollary 1.

Theorem 15 *Suppose that there exists Q^* such that*

$$\nabla f_\phi(A(Q^*))(Q^*+\phi) \equiv -\pi + \int_{Q^*+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - \left(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

Then, $\nabla f_\phi(H_n)(Q^*+\phi) \to 0$ w.p.1

Theorem 16 *Suppose that there exists Q^* at which*

$$\nabla f_\phi(A(Q^*))(Q^*+\phi) \equiv -\pi + \int_{Q^*+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - \left(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

and there exist $\underline{Q}^*(\phi)$ and $\overline{Q}^*(\phi)$ with $0 \le \underline{Q}^*(\phi) \le \overline{Q}^*(\phi)$ such that $[Q^*+\phi]^+ \in [\underline{Q}^*(\phi), \overline{Q}^*(\phi)]$ and for all $Q \in [\underline{Q}^*(\phi), \overline{Q}^*(\phi)]$

$$\nabla f_\phi(A(Q^*))(Q) := -\pi + \int_{Q-\phi+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - \left(p-\frac{a-(Q-\phi)}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

Then, for any $\varepsilon > 0$, there exists $N(\varepsilon) < +\infty$ such that for all $n \ge N(\varepsilon)$

$$Q_n(\phi) \in [\underline{Q}^*(\phi) - \varepsilon, \overline{Q}^*(\phi) + \varepsilon]$$

Corollary 3 *Suppose that there exists Q^* at which*

$$\nabla f_\phi(A(Q^*))(Q^*+\phi) \equiv -\pi + \int_{Q^*+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - \left(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

and $Q^*+\phi$ is the unique solution to

$$\nabla f_\phi(A(Q^*))(Q) \equiv -\pi + \int_{Q-\phi+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - \left(p-\frac{a-(Q-\phi)}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a) = 0$$

Then, $Q_n(\phi)$ converges to $[Q^*+\phi]^+$.

3.6.2.5 Seller's problem in the first stage with updated option price

Seller's problem in the first at period n is given by

$$\max \quad \int_0^{\infty}\left(\pi\left(\int_{\Omega_G} Q(\phi)dG(\phi)\right) + Kq_{o,n} + pq_{s,n} - cq\right)dF(a) \tag{95}$$

$$\text{subject to} \quad -\pi + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (p-c)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) = 0$$
$$\pi \geq 0$$

where $Q(\phi) = Q + \phi$. Here, we again assume that strike price K is fixed at marginal cost c for all period and that for any $x < y$ with $0 < F(x)$ and $F(y) < 1$

$$F(x) < F(y)$$

The second assumption gives the sufficient condition under which the buyer's optimization problem has unique solution. This implies that, given $\pi \geq 0$,

$$-\pi + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (p-c)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dH_n(p)dF(a)$$

is strictly decreasing in Q for all period $n \geq 1$. The objective function in (95) can be written as follows,

$$\begin{aligned}
& \int_0^{\infty}\left(\pi \int_{\Omega_G} Q(\phi)dG(\phi) + Kq_o + pq_s - cq\right)dF(a) \\
= & \int_0^{\infty}\left(\pi \int_{\Omega_G} Q(\phi)dG(\phi) + cq_o + pq_s - cq\right)dF(a) \\
= & \ \pi \int_{\Omega_G} Q(\phi)dG(\phi) + \int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G} Q(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a - \frac{\int_{\Omega_G} Q(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b} - \frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

So, we have

$$\max \quad \pi \int_{\Omega_G} Q(\phi)dG(\phi) + \int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G} Q(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a - \frac{\int_{\Omega_G} Q(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b} - \frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)$$
$$\text{subject to} \quad -\pi + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) = 0$$
$$\pi \geq 0$$

Since $Q(\phi) = [Q+\phi]^+$,

$$\max \quad \pi \int_{\Omega_G} [Q+\phi]^+ dG(\phi) \tag{96}$$

$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)$$

$$\text{subject to}\quad -\pi+\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dH_n(p)dF(a)=0$$

$$\pi\geq 0$$

Since $-\pi+\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dH_n(p)dF(a)=0$ has unique solution given π, (96) can be written

$$\left(\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dH_n(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)$$
$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2$$

So, we have

$$\max\quad \pi\int_{\Omega_G}Q(\phi)dG(\phi)+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}Q(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}Q(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)$$

$$\text{subject to}\quad -\pi+\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH_n(p)dF(a)=0$$

$$\pi\geq 0$$

Since $Q(\phi)=[Q+\phi]^+$,

$$\max\quad \pi\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)$$
$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)$$

$$\text{subject to}\quad -\pi+\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dH_n(p)dF(a)=0$$

$$\pi\geq 0$$

Since $-\pi + \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) = 0$ has unique solution with given $\pi \geq$, (96) can be written

$$\left(\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dH_n(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)$$
$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a - \frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b} - \frac{c}{2}\right)^2$$

Note that as we already see in Lemma 8 and Lemma 9, H_n converges weakly to $A(Q^*)$ if $Q_n(0)$ converges to Q^* w.p.1. Moreover, we have the following result.

Lemma 23

$$\left(\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+ - \left(p - \frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dH_n(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)$$
$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a - \frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b} - \frac{c}{2}\right)^2$$

is equi-continuous in a compact set of Q for all period $n \geq 1$.

By Lemma 23, if $\{Q_n(\phi)\}_n$ converges to $Q^*(\phi)$, then the seller's objective function and buyers' objective function converge uniformly and thus $Q^*(\phi)$ is the solution in the steady state. Now, we need to find the equilibrium point in the steady state to which the sequence $\{Q_n(\phi)\}$ can converge.

Lemma 24 *The only possible equilibrium point for $\{\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi)\}_n$ is zero.*

Theorem 17 *Suppose that there exists the equilibrium point, $\{\int_{\Omega_G} Q^*(\phi)dG(\phi)\}$. Then $\{\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi)\}$ converges to $\{\int_{\Omega_G} Q^*(\phi)dG(\phi)\}$ w.p.1*

3.7 Conclusion

This paper models the strategic interaction of option contract and spot market between single seller and single or multiple buyers where buyers try to learn the market price, called "spot price". Basically, we consider three cases of assumptions imposed on the buyers' forecasting behavior on the price in the spot market when deciding how many options to buy:

1. The buyers use the empirical distribution constructed by the previous spot prices.

2. The buyers assume to know that the spot price decided by the seller in the second stage depends on the demand level

3. The buyer assumes to know that the spot price decided by the seller in the second stage depends on both the demand level and the option decided by the buyer himself/herself.

For each case, we proposed the model in which the seller and buyers can make option contract and then will sell or buy goods in the spot market. For case 1, the model is set as the dynamical system by the nature of the buyer's learning behavior in every period. We show when the limit exists for the sequence of number of option. (Theorem 6, Corollary 1) Consequently we show that the empirical and actual distribution converges if the sequence of number of option converges. Also, we introduces the model in which the seller's pricing decision is endogenous, which means the the seller's pricing decision depends on the buyer's purchasing decision on the option. (Theorem 3). Due to this endogenous property of the problem, the spot price decided by the seller is well ordered in the number of option bought by the buyer in the stochastic ordering sense. (Lemma 5) For case 2 and 3, the model is set as the static system since the buyer's decision is equal in every period. In this paper, we show the buyer's optimal decision in the limit and equilibrium sense. Moreover we show that the more the buyer has information about seller's pricing policy in the spot maker, the more the buyer would like to buy the number of option. (Theorem 12)

Finally, in Section 3.6, we expand the previous model to when buyers is not homogeneous but heterogenous, which means that each buyer has different demand from others.

APPENDIX A

PROOF

A.1 Proof of Linehaul Distance Estimation

For a given origin i and destination j, we show how to calculate the probability

$$\mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}] \tag{97}$$

and the conditional probability

$$\mathbb{P}\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] \text{ for } \alpha \in (0,\, \lambda_{i,0,j}), \tag{98}$$

which is the key to completing the calculation of the expected linehaul distance $\mathbb{E}[\Lambda_{i,j}]$ in (35).

Recall that the $N-1$ terminals besides the center terminal are independent and identically distributed in a region. To facilitate the calculation of $\mathbb{E}[\Lambda_{i,j}]$, we use the uniform distribution on a rectangular region $[-a, a] \times [-b, b] \subset \mathbb{R}^2$, with $a > 0$ and $b > 0$. Specifically, terminal $n = 1, 2, \ldots, N-1$ has coordinates $U_n \in \mathbb{R}^2$, where U_n is uniformly distributed in $[-a, a] \times [-b, b]$, and $U_1, \ldots, U_{N-1}$ are independent. The center terminal is located at $(0, 0)$.

We use the L_1-norm

$$\|(x, y)\|_1 \quad := \quad |x| + |y|$$

and the associated metric, as in (42), (27), (43), (16), and (17). The L_1-norm is used for simplicity; for example, calculations using the L_1-norm are much simpler than when using the L_2-norm $\|(x, y)\|_2 := \sqrt{x^2 + y^2}$. Furthermore, the ratios between the L_1 and L_2-metrics between pairs of points do not vary much. To illustrate this, we show the results of the following simple experiment. We generate

10,000 pairs of points independently and uniformly distributed in the unit square, $(x_1(i), y_1(i)), (x_2(i), y_2(i)))$, $i \in \{1, \ldots, 10,000\}$, and calculate the L_1 and L_2-metrics between every pair of points. Figure 9 shows the cumulative distribution function of the ratio $\|(x_2(i), y_2(i)) - (x_1(i), y_1(i))\|_2 / \|(x_2(i), y_2(i)) - (x_1(i), y_1(i))\|_1$. Note that the ratio varies between $1/\sqrt{2}$ and 1, and that 0.8 is a pretty good overall approximation for the ratio.

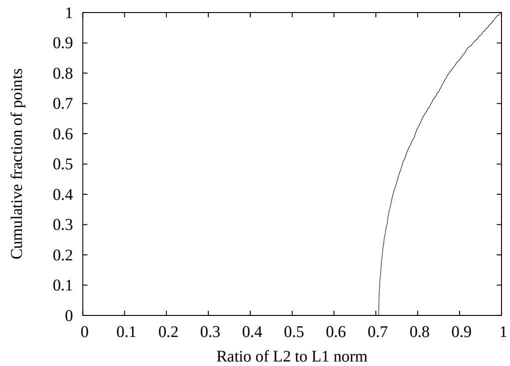


Figure 9: Cumulative distribution function of ratio $(\|x_2, y_2\|_1)^{-1} \|x_1, y_1\|_2$.

Let (x_1, y_1) denote the coordinates of origin i, and let (x_2, y_2) denote the coordinates of destination j. Then, for any terminal n,

$$\lambda_{i,n,j} \quad := \quad \|U_n - (x_1, y_1)\|_1 + \|(x_2, y_2) - U_n\|_1$$

The triangle inequality holds for any terminal n, i.e.,

$$\lambda_{i,n,j} \quad \geq \quad \|(x_2, y_2) - (x_1, y_1)\|_1 \quad = \quad |x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|$$

and $\lambda_{i,n,j} = |x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|$ when terminal n is located within the rectangle with sides parallel with the coordinate axes and having opposite corners (x_1, y_1) and (x_2, y_2). Note that travel through the center terminal results in a total distance

$$\lambda_{i,0,j} \quad = \quad |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|.$$

Thus, the random variable $\Lambda_{i,j}$ defined in (32) satisfies

$$|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1| \quad \leq \quad \Lambda_{i,j} \quad \leq \quad |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|.$$

To calculate the probabilities in (97) and (98), we consider the following three cases separately:

1. Origin i and destination j are located in opposite quadrants.

2. Origin i and destination j are located in the same quadrant.

3. Origin i and destination j are located in adjacent quadrants.

If origin i and destination j are located in opposite quadrants, then

$$|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1| \quad = \quad |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|$$

and thus

$$\Lambda_{i,j} \quad = \quad \lambda_{i,0,j} \quad = \quad |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|$$

for all selections of $\mathcal{N}_i$ and $\mathcal{N}_j$. Thus $\mathbb{E}[\Lambda_{i,j}] = |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|$.

It remains to consider the cases in which origin i and destination j are not located in opposite quadrants. Note that since the distribution of $\Lambda_{i,j}$ has support on $[|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|]$, it follows that the integral in the expression for $E[\Lambda_{i,j}]$ in (35) can be written as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} &\int_0^{\lambda_{i,0,j}} \mathbb{P}\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,\middle|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right]^\ell \, d\alpha \\ &= \quad |x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1| + \int_{|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|}^{|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|} \mathbb{P}\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,\middle|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right]^\ell \, d\alpha \end{aligned} \tag{99}$$

Note that, because terminals $1, 2, \ldots, N-1$ are uniformly distributed in the rectangle $[-a, a] \times [-b, b]$, the probabilities in (97) and (98) can be expressed as

$$\begin{aligned} &\mathbb{P}\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] \\ &= \frac{\text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \in [-a,a] \times [-b,b] \ : \ \begin{array}{l} \|(x,y)-(x_1,y_1)\|_1 + \|(x_2,y_2)-(x,y)\|_1 \\ < |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2| \end{array}\right\}\right)}{4ab} \end{aligned} \tag{100}$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\mathbb{P}\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,\middle|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] \qquad (101)\\
&= \frac{\operatorname{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \in [-a,a]\times[-b,b] \ : \ \begin{array}{l} \alpha < \|(x,y)-(x_1,y_1)\|_1 + \|(x_2,y_2)-(x,y)\|_1 \\ < |x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2| \end{array}\right\}\right)}{\operatorname{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \in [-a,a]\times[-b,b] \ : \ \begin{array}{l} \|(x,y)-(x_1,y_1)\|_1 + \|(x_2,y_2)-(x,y)\|_1 \\ < |x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2| \end{array}\right\}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

for $\alpha \in (0, \lambda_{i,0,j})$. The areas in the right side of (101) and (102) are straightforward to calculate. Figures 10 and 11 show the regions, with origin i and destination j located in the same quadrant and in adjacent quadrants respectively, in which location of terminal n provides a linehaul distance $\lambda_{i,n,j}$ that satisfies $\lambda_{i,n,j} \leq \alpha$ for $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$. In particular, if terminal n is located on the boundary of the eight-sided region, then $\lambda_{i,n,j} = \alpha$, and if terminal n is located in the interior of the eight-sided region, then $\lambda_{i,n,j} < \alpha$. Setting $\alpha = \lambda_{i,0,j} = |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|$ gives the region in which location of a terminal provides a smaller linehaul distance than through the center terminal. We show that $\mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}]$ is a piecewise polynomial in α of degree at most two, from which the calculation of $\int_0^{\lambda_{i,0,j}} \mathbb{P}[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \,|\, \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}]^{\ell} \, d\alpha$ follows in a straightforward manner (although it is numerically dangerous due to catastrophic cancellation).

The remainder of the appendix is organized as follows. We provide the detailed calculations for the case in which the rectangle $[-a,a] \times [-b,b]$ contains (x_1, y_1) and (x_2, y_2). The calculations for the case in which the rectangle does not contain (x_1, y_1) and (x_2, y_2) are similar, but involve more subcases. Section A.1.1 shows the calculations for the case in which the origin and destination are located in the same quadrant, and Section A.1.2 for the case in which they are located in adjacent quadrants.

A.1.1 Origin and Destination Located in the Same Quadrant

First, suppose that $0 \le x_1 \le x_2$ and $0 \le y_1 \le y_2$. Then i and j are both in quadrant I. For $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$, let

$$
\begin{aligned}
R_1^S(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \;:\; -a \le x \le a \text{ and } -b \le y \le \frac{-\alpha - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2}{2}\right\}\right)\\
R_2^S(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \;:\; \begin{array}{l} -a \le x \le \frac{-\alpha+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2}{2} \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \le y \le \frac{\alpha+x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \end{array}\right\}\right)\\
R_3^S(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \;:\; -a \le x \le a \text{ and } \frac{\alpha + x_1 - x_2 + y_1 + y_2}{2} \le y \le b\right\}\right)\\
R_4^S(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \;:\; \begin{array}{l} \frac{\alpha+x_1+x_2+y_1-y_2}{2} \le x \le a \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \le y \le \frac{\alpha+x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \end{array}\right\}\right)\\
R_5^S(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \;:\; \begin{array}{l} 2(x-y) \ge \alpha + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2 \\ \text{and } x_2 \le x \le \frac{\alpha+x_1+x_2+y_1-y_2}{2} \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \le y \le y_1 \end{array}\right\}\right)\\
R_6^S(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \;:\; \begin{array}{l} -2(x+y) \ge \alpha - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2 \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2}{2} \le x \le x_1 \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \le y \le y_1 \end{array}\right\}\right)\\
R_7^S(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \;:\; \begin{array}{l} 2(y-x) \ge \alpha - x_1 - x_2 + y_1 + y_2 \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2}{2} \le x \le x_1 \\ \text{and } y_2 \le y \le \frac{\alpha+x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \end{array}\right\}\right)\\
R_8^S(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \;:\; \begin{array}{l} 2(x+y) \ge \alpha + x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2 \\ \text{and } x_2 \le x \le \frac{\alpha+x_1+x_2+y_1-y_2}{2} \\ \text{and } y_2 \le y \le \frac{\alpha+x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \end{array}\right\}\right).
\end{aligned}
$$

Figure 10 shows the regions defining $R_1^S(\alpha), \ldots, R_8^S(\alpha)$ for a value of $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$. The lines 1–8 in Figure 10 form the boundaries of the regions defining $R_1^S(\alpha), \ldots, R_8^S(\alpha)$, and it will be convenient to refer to the line numbers in the figure.

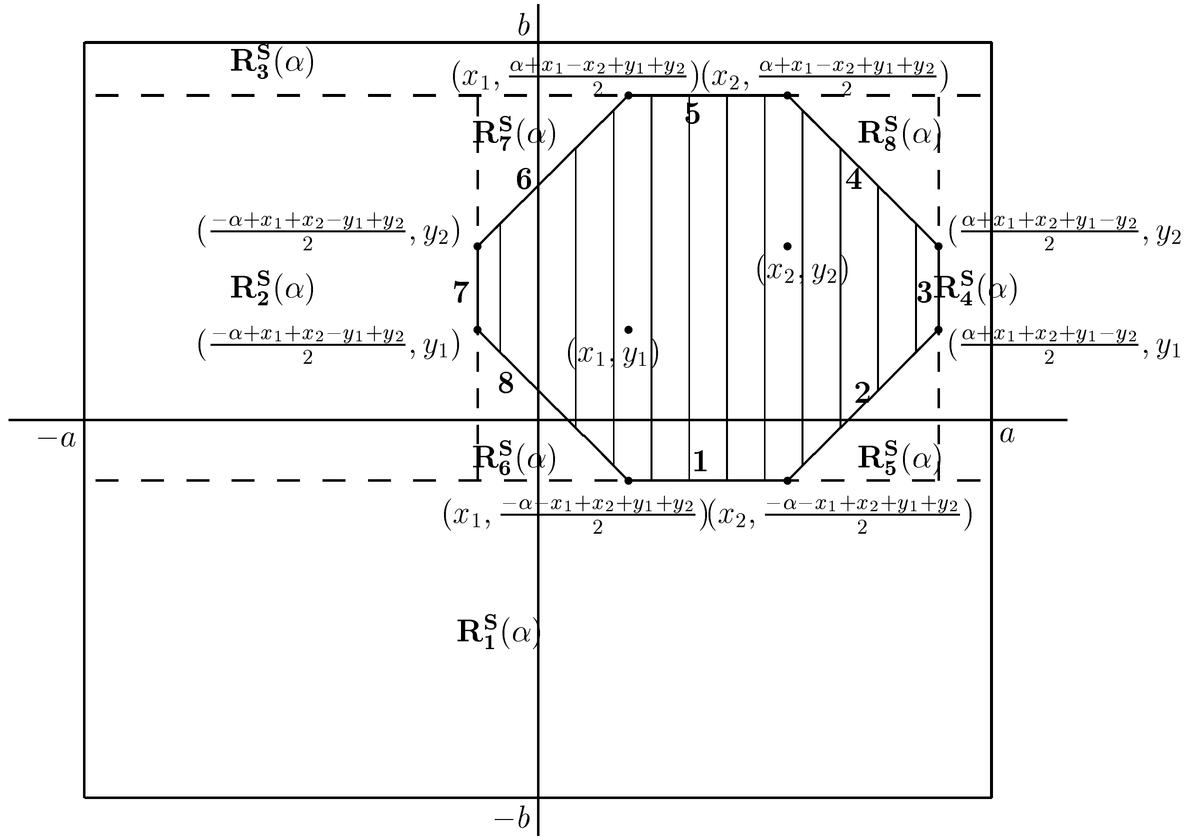


Figure 10: Example of the region in which location of a terminal provides a smaller linehaul distance than $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$ if (x_1, y_1) and (x_2, y_2) are in the same quadrant.

For the special case with $\alpha = \lambda_{i,0,j} = |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$, let

$$R_k^S \quad := \quad R_k^S(\lambda_{i,0,j}).$$

Then, the probabilities in (101) and (102) are given by

$$P\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] \quad = \quad \frac{4ab - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S}{4ab}$$

and

$$P\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \mid \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] \quad = \quad \frac{\sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S(\alpha) - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S}{4ab - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S} \tag{102}$$

Next, we allow i and j to be in any quadrant (as long as i and j are in the same quadrant), and we allow $x_1 > x_2$ or $y_1 > y_2$. Using Figure 10, it is easy to observe that regardless of the quadrant in which i and j are, the areas $R_1^S(\alpha), \ldots, R_8^S(\alpha)$ depend only on the minimum and maximum of the distances of i and j from the x

and y axes. Hence, let

$$\underline{x} \;:=\; |x_1| \wedge |x_2|, \quad \overline{x} \;:=\; |x_1| \vee |x_2|, \quad \underline{y} \;:=\; |y_1| \wedge |y_2|, \quad \text{and} \quad \overline{y} \;:=\; |y_1| \vee |y_2| \tag{103}$$

Then, in general, with i and j in the same quadrant, it follows that

$$\begin{aligned}
R_1^S(\alpha) &= 2a\left(\frac{-\alpha-\underline{x}+\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}+b\right)\mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha<2b-\underline{x}+\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}\}} \\
R_2^S(\alpha) &= \left(\frac{-\alpha+\underline{x}+\overline{x}-\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}+a\right) \\
&\quad \times\left(\left(b\wedge\frac{\alpha+\underline{x}-\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}\right)-\left((-b)\vee\frac{-\alpha-\underline{x}+\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}\right)\right)\times\mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha<2a+\underline{x}+\overline{x}-\underline{y}+\overline{y}\}} \\
R_3^S(\alpha) &= 2a\left(b-\frac{\alpha+\underline{x}-\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}\right)\mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha<2b-\underline{x}+\overline{x}-\underline{y}-\overline{y}\}} \\
R_4^S(\alpha) &= \left(a-\frac{\alpha+\underline{x}+\overline{x}+\underline{y}-\overline{y}}{2}\right) \\
&\quad \times\left(\left(b\wedge\frac{\alpha+\underline{x}-\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}\right)-\left((-b)\vee\frac{-\alpha-\underline{x}+\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}\right)\right)\times\mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha<2a-\underline{x}-\overline{x}-\underline{y}+\overline{y}\}} \\
R_5^S(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}\left(\left(a\wedge\frac{\alpha+\underline{x}+\overline{x}+\underline{y}-\overline{y}}{2}\right)-\left(\overline{x}\vee\left(\frac{\alpha+\underline{x}+\overline{x}-\underline{y}-\overline{y}}{2}-b\right)\right)\right)^2 \\
&\quad \times\mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha<2(a+b)-\underline{x}-\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}\}} \\
R_6^S(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}\left(\left(\underline{x}\wedge\left(b+\frac{-\alpha+\underline{x}+\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}\right)\right)-\left((-a)\vee\frac{-\alpha+\underline{x}+\overline{x}-\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}\right)\right)^2 \\
R_7^S(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}\left(\left(x_1\wedge\left(b-\frac{\alpha-\underline{x}-\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}\right)\right)-\left((-a)\vee\frac{-\alpha+\underline{x}+\overline{x}-\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}\right)\right)^2 \\
&\quad \times\mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha<2(a+b)+\underline{x}+\overline{x}-\underline{y}-\overline{y}\}} \\
R_8^S(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}\left(\left(a\wedge\frac{\alpha+\underline{x}+\overline{x}+\underline{y}-\overline{y}}{2}\right)-\left(\overline{x}\vee\left(\frac{\alpha+\underline{x}+\overline{x}+\underline{y}+\overline{y}}{2}-b\right)\right)\right)^2 \\
&\quad \times\mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha<2(a+b)-\underline{x}-\overline{x}-\underline{y}-\overline{y}\}}.
\end{aligned}$$

Note that in these area calculations one must keep in mind that part of the boundary of the eight-sided region in Figure 10 may be outside the rectangle $[-a,a]\times[-b,b]$. Thus, depending on the boundary of the eight-sided region, some of the areas $R_1^S(\alpha),\ldots,R_8^S(\alpha)$ may be 0. In the expressions for $R_1^S(\alpha),\ldots,R_8^S(\alpha)$ above, this is accomplished with the indicator functions (except for $R_6^S(\alpha)$, because $a>0$, $b>0$, and $\underline{x}+\underline{y}>0$ imply $R_6^S(\alpha)>0$).

To finish the expected linehaul distance calculations, it follows from (99) and (102) that we must calculate

$$\begin{aligned}
&\int_{|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|}^{|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|} P\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \mid \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right]^{\ell} \, d\alpha \\
&\quad = \int_{|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|}^{|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|} \left[\frac{\sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S(\alpha) - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S}{4ab - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S}\right]^{\ell} d\alpha. \qquad (104)
\end{aligned}$$

To calculate (104), we write $\sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S(\alpha)$ as a piecewise polynomial in α of degree at most two. We will choose $A(\alpha), B(\alpha), C_1(\alpha)$, and C_2 such that

$$A(\alpha)\alpha^2 + B(\alpha)\alpha + C_1(\alpha) = \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S(\alpha) \quad \text{and} \quad C_2 = \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S.$$

Considering the interval over which each indicator function in the expressions for $R_1^S(\alpha), \ldots, R_8^S(\alpha)$, is 0, the interval $[|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|]$ can be partitioned into intervals over which $A(\alpha)$, $B(\alpha)$, and $C_1(\alpha)$ are constant. Also, for $C(\alpha) := C_1(\alpha) - C_2$,

$$\begin{aligned}
\left[\sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S(\alpha) - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S\right]^{\ell} &= \left[A(\alpha)\alpha^2 + B(\alpha)\alpha + C(\alpha)\right]^{\ell} \\
&= \sum_{\left\{\substack{\ell_1,\ell_2,\ell_3 : \\ \ell_1+\ell_2+\ell_3=\ell}\right\}} \frac{\ell!}{\ell_1!\ell_2!\ell_3!} \left[A(\alpha)\alpha^2\right]^{\ell_1} \left[B(\alpha)\alpha\right]^{\ell_2} \left[C(\alpha)\right]^{\ell_3} \\
&= \sum_{\left\{\substack{\ell_1,\ell_2,\ell_3 : \\ \ell_1+\ell_2+\ell_3=\ell}\right\}} \frac{\ell!}{\ell_1!\ell_2!\ell_3!} A(\alpha)^{\ell_1} B(\alpha)^{\ell_2} C(\alpha)^{\ell_3} \alpha^{2\ell_1+\ell_2},
\end{aligned}$$

and thus it follows from (104) that

$$\begin{aligned}
&\int_{|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|}^{|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|} P\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \mid \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right]^{\ell} \, d\alpha \qquad (105) \\
&= \left[\frac{1}{4ab - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S}\right]^{\ell} \int_{|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|}^{|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|} \sum_{\left\{\substack{\ell_1,\ell_2,\ell_3 : \\ \ell_1+\ell_2+\ell_3=\ell}\right\}} \frac{\ell!}{\ell_1!\ell_2!\ell_3!} A(\alpha)^{\ell_1} B(\alpha)^{\ell_2} C(\alpha)^{\ell_3} \alpha^{2\ell_1+\ell_2} \, d\alpha.
\end{aligned}$$

Calculating (106) is easy when the shaded region in Figure 10 is inside the rectangle $[-a, a] \times [-b, b]$ for all $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$. In this case, $A(\alpha)$, $B(\alpha)$, and $C_1(\alpha)$ are constant for all $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$. For example, suppose that $a = b$ and

$$(x_1, y_1) \quad = \quad \left(\frac{1}{4}a, \frac{1}{4}a\right) \quad \text{and} \quad (x_2, y_2) \quad = \quad \left(\frac{1}{2}a, \frac{1}{2}a\right).$$

Then, $|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1| = a/2$ and $|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2| = 3a/2$, and, for all $\alpha \in (a/2, 3a/2)$,

$$A(\alpha) \quad = \quad -\frac{1}{2}, \quad B(\alpha) \quad = \quad 0, \quad \text{and} \quad C_1(\alpha) \quad = \quad \frac{65}{16}a^2.$$

Furthermore, $\sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S = 25a^2/8$. Suppose, for example, that $\ell = 1$. Then, (106) is easily calculated as

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_{a/2}^{3a/2} P\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \mid \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] d\alpha \quad &= \quad \frac{1}{4a^2 - \frac{25}{8}a^2} \int_{a/2}^{3a/2} \left[A(\alpha)\alpha^2 + B(\alpha)\alpha + C(\alpha)\right] d\alpha \\
&= \quad \frac{1}{\frac{7}{8}a^2} \int_{a/2}^{3a/2} \left[-\frac{1}{2}\alpha^2 + \left(\frac{65}{16}a^2 - \frac{25}{8}a^2\right)\right] d\alpha \\
&= \quad \frac{2}{21}a.
\end{aligned}$$

Note that when $\alpha = 3a/2$, then $R_3^S(\alpha) = R_4^S(\alpha) = 0$. In particular, when $\alpha = 3a/2$, the lines 5 and 3 are exactly on the boundary of the rectangle $[-a, a] \times [-a, a]$. Consider a different choice of (x_1, y_1) and (x_2, y_2), for example,

$$(x_1, y_1) \quad = \quad \left(\frac{1}{4}a, \frac{1}{4}a\right) \quad \text{and} \quad (x_2, y_2) \quad = \quad \left(\frac{3}{4}a, \frac{3}{4}a\right).$$

Then $R_3^S(\alpha) = R_4^S(\alpha) = 0$ for α in a nonempty portion of the interval

$$(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|) \quad = \quad (a, 2a),$$

which causes $A(\alpha)$, $B(\alpha)$, and $C_1(\alpha)$ to be piecewise constant with multiple pieces (rather than constant) over the interval $(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$. Specifically, $R_3^S(\alpha) = R_4^S(\alpha) = 0$ for all $\alpha \in [3a/2, 2a)$. Furthermore,

$$A(\alpha) \quad = \quad \begin{cases} -\frac{1}{2} & \text{if} \quad a < \alpha < \frac{3}{2}a \\ 0 & \text{if} \quad \frac{3}{2}a \le \alpha < 2a \end{cases}$$

$$B(\alpha) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if} \quad a < \alpha < \frac{3}{2}a \\ -a & \text{if} \quad \frac{3}{2}a \le \alpha < 2a \end{cases}$$

$$C_1(\alpha) = \begin{cases} \frac{17}{4}a^2 & \text{if} \quad a < \alpha < \frac{3}{2}a \\ \frac{37}{8}a^2 & \text{if} \quad \frac{3}{2}a \le \alpha < 2a \end{cases},$$

and $\sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^S = 21a^2/8$. When $\ell = 1$, (106) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}
&\int_a^{2a} P\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \mid \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] d\alpha \\
=\ & \frac{1}{4a^2 - \frac{21}{8}a^2} \int_a^{2a} \left[A(\alpha)\alpha^2 + B(\alpha)\alpha + C(\alpha)\right] d\alpha \\
=\ & \frac{8}{11}\frac{1}{a^2}\left(\int_a^{3a/2}\left[-\frac{1}{2}\alpha^2 + \left(\frac{17}{4}a^2 - \frac{21}{8}a^2\right)\right] d\alpha + \int_{3a/2}^{2a}\left[-a\alpha + \left(\frac{37}{8}a^2 - \frac{21}{8}a^2\right)\right] d\alpha\right) \\
=\ & \frac{13}{33}a.
\end{aligned}$$

In general, integrating (106) requires partitioning the interval $(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$ into the subintervals over which $A(\alpha)$, $B(\alpha)$, and $C(\alpha)$ are constant. The intervals of α-values over which lines 1–8 are inside or outside the rectangle $[-a, a] \times [-b, b]$, determine the intervals of α-values over which the triangles $R_5^S(\alpha)$, $R_7^S(\alpha)$, and $R_8^S(\alpha)$ have positive areas, and the intervals of α-values over which $A(\alpha), B(\alpha)$, and $C_1(\alpha)$ are constant, from which the calculation of (106) follows directly. We first consider the cases determined by which of the lines 1, 3, 5, and 7 in Figure 10 are outside the rectangle $[-a, a] \times [-b, b]$, and then, if required, consider further subcases determined by which triangles have positive area. Fortunately, dependencies imply that many of the $2^4 \times 2^3$ conceivable cases cannot occur. For example, examination of Figure 10 shows that if line 3 is inside the rectangle so that $(\alpha + x_1 + x_2 + y_1 - y_2)/2 < a$, then $\alpha < 2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2 \le 2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2$, which implies that line 7 is also inside the rectangle. We show only the cases that can occur.

A.1.1.1 *Calculating the piecewise constant functions $A(\alpha)$, $B(\alpha)$, and $C(\alpha)$*

For easy reference to Figure 10, and without loss of generality, assume that $x_1 = \underline{x}$, $x_2 = \overline{x}$, $y_1 = \underline{y}$, and $y_2 = \overline{y}$. Note that in this case $R_6^S(\alpha) > 0$ for all $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$. The following cases can occur:

1. Lines 1, 3, 5, and 7 are inside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \in\ & [|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|,\ (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\ & \wedge(2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

   which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) > 0$, $R_7^S(\alpha) > 0$, and $R_8^S(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}A(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{2} \\ B(\alpha) &= 0 \\ C_1(\alpha) &= 4ab + \frac{1}{2}(x_2 - x_1)^2 + \frac{1}{2}(y_2 - y_1)^2.\end{aligned}$$

2. Lines 1, 5, and 7 are inside the rectangle, but line 3 is outside, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2), \\ & (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ & \wedge(2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

   which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) > 0$, $R_7^S(\alpha) > 0$, and $R_8^S(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}A(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{4} \\ B(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}(x_1 + x_2) - a \\ C_1(\alpha) &= a(a + 4b - x_1 - x_2) + \frac{1}{2}(x_1^2 + x_2^2) + \frac{1}{4}(x_2 - x_1)^2 + \frac{1}{4}(y_2 - y_1)^2\end{aligned}$$

3. Lines 1, 3, and 7 are inside the rectangle, but line 5 is outside, that is,

$$\alpha \in [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2),$$

$$(2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2)$$

$$\wedge(2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) > 0$, $R_7^S(\alpha) > 0$, and $R_8^S(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{4} \\
B(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}(y_1 + y_2) - b \\
C_1(\alpha) &= b(4a + b - y_1 - y_2) + \frac{1}{4}(x_2 - x_1)^2 + \frac{1}{4}(y_2 - y_1)^2 + \frac{1}{2}(y_1^2 + y_2^2)
\end{aligned}$$

4. Lines 1 and 7 are inside the rectangle, but lines 3 and 5 are outside, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\
& (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))
\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_7^S(\alpha) > 0$. The following two subcases can occur:

(a) Part of line 4 is inside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\
& (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2(a + b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \\
& \wedge(|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)]
\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_8^S(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= 0 \\
B(\alpha) &= -(a + b) + \frac{1}{2}(x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\
C_1(\alpha) &= (a + b)^2 + 2ab - a(x_1 + x_2) - b(y_1 + y_2) + \frac{1}{2}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2 + y_1^2 + y_2^2\right).
\end{aligned}$$

(b) Line 4 is outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\alpha \in [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2)$$

$$\vee(2(a+b)-x_1-x_2-y_1-y_2),$$

$$(2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2)\wedge(2b-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2)\wedge(|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|)]$$

which implies that $R_8^S(\alpha)=0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{8}\\
B(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{2}(a+b)+\frac{1}{4}(x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2)\\
C_1(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}(a+b)^2+2ab+\frac{1}{2}(b-a)(x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2).
\end{aligned}$$

5. Lines 1 and 5 are inside the rectangle, but lines 3 and 7 are outside, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|)\vee(2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2)\vee(2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2),\\
& (2b-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2)\wedge(2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2)\wedge(|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|))
\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha)>0$, $R_7^S(\alpha)>0$, and $R_8^S(\alpha)>0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= 0\\
B(\alpha) &= -2a\\
C_1(\alpha) &= 2a(a+2b)+x_1^2+x_2^2.
\end{aligned}$$

6. Lines 3 and 7 are inside the rectangle, but lines 1 and 5 are outside, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|)\vee(2b-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2)\vee(2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2),\\
& (2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2)\wedge(2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2)\wedge(|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|))
\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha)>0$, $R_7^S(\alpha)>0$, and $R_8^S(\alpha)>0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= 0\\
B(\alpha) &= -2b\\
C_1(\alpha) &= 2b(2a+b)+y_1^2+y_2^2.
\end{aligned}$$

7. Line 7 is inside the rectangle, but lines 1, 3, and 5 are outside, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \ \in \ & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ & \vee(2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_7^S(\alpha) > 0$. The following three subcases can occur:

(a) Parts of lines 2 and 4 are inside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \ \in \ & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ & \vee(2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\ & \wedge(2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8^S(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{4} \\ B(\alpha) &= -\frac{3}{2}a - 2b + \frac{1}{2}(x_1 + x_2) - \frac{1}{4}(y_1 + y_2) \\ C_1(\alpha) &= a^2 + 4ab + 2b^2 - a(x_1 + x_2) + \frac{1}{4}(x_1 + x_2)^2 + \frac{3}{4}(y_1 + y_2)^2 - y_1 y_2.\end{aligned}$$

(b) Part of line 2 is inside the rectangle and line 4 is outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \ \in \ & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ & \quad \vee(2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \vee (2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\ & (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ & \wedge(|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8^S(\alpha) = 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{8} \\ B(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{2}a - \frac{3}{2}b + \frac{1}{4}(x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \\ C_1(\alpha) &= (a+b)^2 + 2ab - a(x_1 + x_2) + (a+b)(y_1 + y_2) - \frac{3}{4}(x_1^2 + x_2^2) - \frac{1}{4}(y_1^2 + y_2^2) \\ & \quad +(x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2)^2.\end{aligned}$$

(c) Lines 2 and 4 are outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ & \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \vee (2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 + y_1 + y_2), \\ & (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) = R_8^S(\alpha) = 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned} A(\alpha) &= 0 \\ B(\alpha) &= -b \\ C_1(\alpha) &= b(2a + b + x_1 + x_2) + \frac{1}{2}(y_1^2 + y_2^2). \end{aligned}$$

8. Line 1 is inside the rectangle, but lines 3, 5 and 7 are outside, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\ & \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) > 0$. The following three subcases can occur:

(a) Parts of lines 4 and 6 are inside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\ & \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ & \wedge (2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_7^S(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8^S(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned} A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{4} \\ B(\alpha) &= -2a - b + \frac{1}{2}(y_1 + y_2) \\ C_1(\alpha) &= 2a^2 + 4ab + b^2 - b(y_1 + y_2) + \frac{3}{4}\left(x_1 + x_2\right)^2 + \frac{1}{4}\left(y_1 + y_2\right)^2 + \frac{1}{2}x_1 x_2. \end{aligned}$$

(b) Part of line 6 is inside the rectangle and line 4 is outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \quad \in \quad & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\ & \quad \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \vee (2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\ & (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2(a+b) + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \\ & \wedge(|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_7^S(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8^S(\alpha) = 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned} A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{8} \\ B(\alpha) &= -\frac{3}{2}a - \frac{1}{2}b + \frac{1}{4}(-x_1 - x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ C_1(\alpha) &= \frac{3}{2}a^2 + 3ab + \frac{1}{2}b^2 + \frac{1}{2}(a+b)(x_1 + x_2) + \frac{1}{2}(a-b)(y_1 + y_2) \\ & \quad + \frac{1}{2}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2\right) + \frac{1}{8}\left(x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2\right)^2 . \end{aligned}$$

(c) Lines 4 and 6 are outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \quad \in \quad & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\ & \quad \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \vee (2(a+b) + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\ & (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_7^S(\alpha) = R_8^S(\alpha) = 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned} A(\alpha) &= 0 \\ B(\alpha) &= -a \\ C_1(\alpha) &= a(a + 2b + y_1 + y_2) + \frac{1}{2}(x_1^2 + x_2^2). \end{aligned}$$

9. Lines 1, 3, 5, and 7 are outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \quad \in \quad & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\ & \quad \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2),\ |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)\end{aligned}$$

The following five subcases can occur:

(a) Parts of lines 2, 4, and 6 are inside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}
\alpha \;\in\; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\
& \vee(2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\
& (2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))
\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) > 0$, $R_7^S(\alpha) > 0$, and $R_8^S(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2} \\
B(\alpha) &= -2(a+b) \\
C_1(\alpha) &= 2(a+b)^2 + \frac{1}{2}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2 + y_1^2 + y_2^2\right) + x_1 x_2 + y_1 y_2.
\end{aligned}$$

(b) Parts of lines 2 and 6 are inside the rectangle and line 4 is outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}
\alpha \;\in\; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\
& \vee(2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \\
& \vee(2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2), (2(a+b) + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \\
& \wedge(2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))
\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) > 0$, $R_7^S(\alpha) > 0$, and $R_8^S(\alpha) = 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= \frac{3}{8} \\
B(\alpha) &= -\frac{3}{2}a - \frac{3}{2}b - \frac{1}{4}(x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\
C_1(\alpha) &= \frac{3}{2}(a+b) + \frac{3}{4}(x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2).
\end{aligned}$$

(c) Part of line 6 is inside the rectangle and lines 2 and 4 are outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}
\alpha \;\in\; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\
& \vee(2b - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2)
\end{aligned}$$

$$\vee(2(a+b)-x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2),(2(a+b)+x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2)$$

$$\wedge(|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|))$$

which implies that $R_7^S(\alpha)>0$ and $R_5^S(\alpha)=R_8^S(\alpha)=0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{4}\\
B(\alpha) &= -a-b-\frac{1}{2}x_1-\frac{1}{2}x_2\\
C_1(\alpha) &= \left(a+b+\frac{1}{2}(x_1+x_2)\right)^2+\frac{1}{4}\left(y_1+y_2\right)^2.
\end{aligned}$$

(d) Part of line 2 is inside the rectangle and lines 4 and 6 are outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|)\vee(2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2)\vee(2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2)\\
&\vee(2b-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2)\vee(2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2)\\
&\vee(2(a+b)+x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2),(2(a+b)-x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2)\\
&\wedge(|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|))
\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha)>0$ and $R_7^S(\alpha)=R_8^S(\alpha)=0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{4}\\
B(\alpha) &= -a-b-\frac{1}{2}y_1-\frac{1}{2}y_2\\
C_1(\alpha) &= \left(a+b+\frac{1}{2}(y_1+y_2)\right)^2+\frac{1}{4}\left(x_1+x_2\right)^2.
\end{aligned}$$

(e) Lines 2, 4, and 6 are outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|)\vee(2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2)\vee(2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2)\\
&\vee(2b-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2)\vee(2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2)\\
&\vee(2(a+b)+x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2)\vee(2(a+b)-x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2),\\
&|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|)
\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_5^S(\alpha) = R_7^S(\alpha) = R_8^S(\alpha) = 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{8} \\
B(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{2}(a+b) - \frac{1}{4}(x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2) \\
C_1(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}(a+b)(a+b+x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2) \\
&\quad +\frac{1}{8}(x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2)^2.
\end{aligned}$$

A.1.2 Origin and Destination Located in Adjacent Quadrants

First, suppose that $x_1 \leq 0 \leq x_2$ and $0 \leq y_1 \leq y_2$. Then i is in quadrant II and j is in quadrant I, as in Figure 11. For $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$, let

$$\begin{aligned}
R_1^A(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \ : \ -a \leq x \leq a \text{ and } -b \leq y \leq \frac{-\alpha - x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2}{2}\right\}\right) \\
R_2^A(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \ : \ \begin{array}{l} -a \leq x \leq \frac{-\alpha+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2}{2} \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \leq y \leq \frac{\alpha+x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \end{array}\right\}\right) \\
R_3^A(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \ : \ -a \leq x \leq a \text{ and } \frac{\alpha + x_1 - x_2 + y_1 + y_2}{2} \leq y \leq b\right\}\right) \\
R_4^A(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \ : \ \begin{array}{l} \frac{\alpha+x_1+x_2+y_1-y_2}{2} \leq x \leq a \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \leq y \leq \frac{\alpha+x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \end{array}\right\}\right) \\
R_5^A(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \ : \ \begin{array}{l} 2(x-y) \geq \alpha + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2 \\ \text{and } x_2 \leq x \leq \frac{\alpha+x_1+x_2+y_1-y_2}{2} \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \leq y \leq y_1 \end{array}\right\}\right) \\
R_6^A(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \ : \ \begin{array}{l} 2(x+y) \geq -\alpha + x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2 \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2}{2} \leq x \leq x_1 \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha-x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \leq y \leq y_1 \end{array}\right\}\right) \\
R_7^A(\alpha) &:= \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y) \ : \ \begin{array}{l} 2(y-x) \geq \alpha - x_1 - x_2 + y_1 + y_2 \\ \text{and } \frac{-\alpha+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2}{2} \leq x \leq x_1 \\ \text{and } y_2 \leq y \leq \frac{\alpha+x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \end{array}\right\}\right)
\end{aligned}$$

$$R_8^A(\alpha) \quad := \quad \text{Area}\left(\left\{(x,y)\ :\ \begin{array}{c} 2(x+y) \geq \alpha + x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2 \\ \text{and } x_2 \leq x \leq \frac{\alpha+x_1+x_2+y_1-y_2}{2} \\ \text{and } y_2 \leq y \leq \frac{\alpha+x_1-x_2+y_1+y_2}{2} \end{array}\right\}\right).$$

Figure 11 shows the regions defining $R_1^A(\alpha), \ldots, R_8^A(\alpha)$ for a value of $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$. The lines 1–8 in Figure 11 form the boundaries of the regions defining $R_1^A(\alpha), \ldots, R_8^A(\alpha)$.

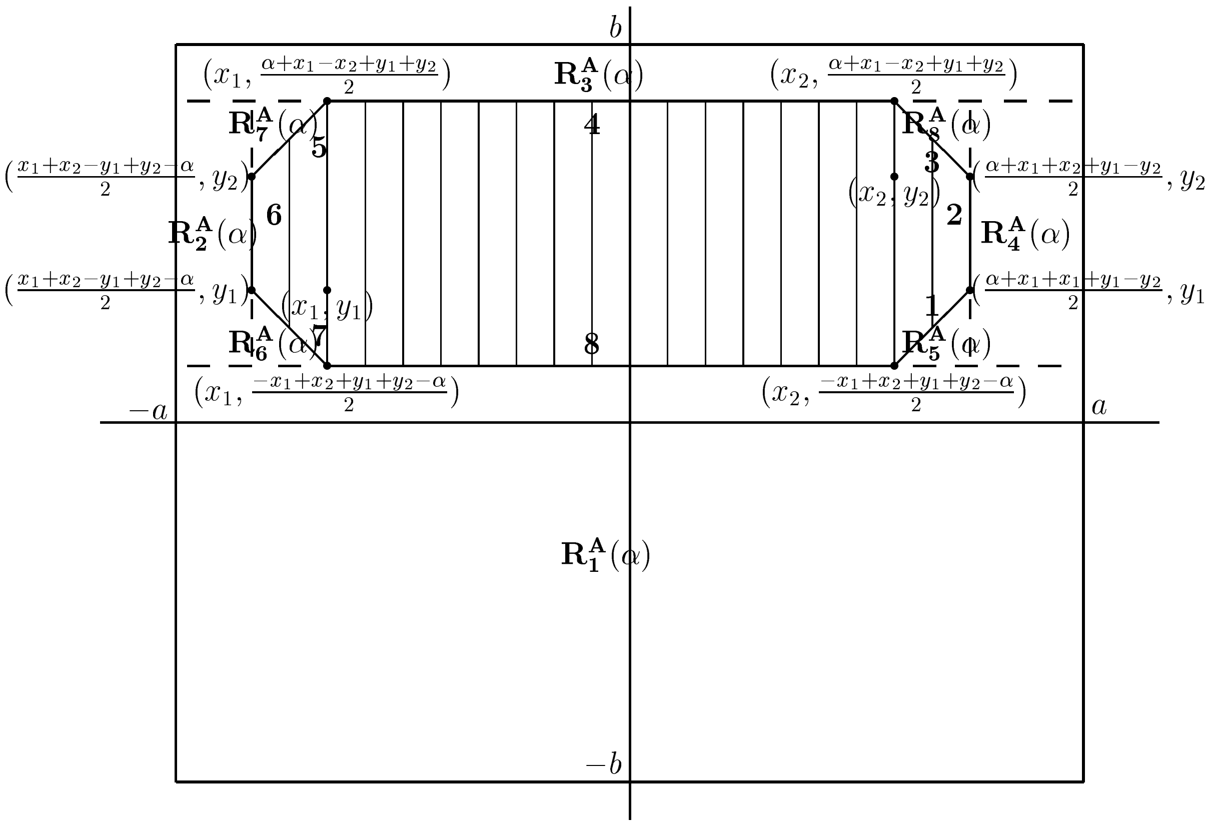


Figure 11: Example of the region in which location of a terminal provides a smaller L_1 linehaul distance than $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$ if (x_1, y_1) and (x_2, y_2) are in adjacent quadrants.

For the special case with $\alpha = \lambda_{i,0,j} = |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$, let

$$R_k^A \quad := \quad R_k^A(\lambda_{i,0,j}).$$

Then, the probabilities in (101) and (102) are given by

$$P\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] \quad = \quad \frac{4ab - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^A}{4ab}$$

and

$$P\left[\lambda_{i,1,j} > \alpha \mid \lambda_{i,1,j} < \lambda_{i,0,j}\right] \quad = \quad \frac{\sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^A(\alpha) - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^A}{4ab - \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^A} \tag{106}$$

Next, we allow i and j to be in any adjacent quadrants, and we allow $x_1 > x_2$ or $y_1 > y_2$. It is easy to see how to choose a new coordinate system with the same origin and scale as the original coordinate system and with axes coinciding with the axes of the original coordinate system, so that j will be in the new quadrant I and i will be in the new quadrant II. Furthermore, using Figure 11, it is easy to observe that in the new coordinate system, the areas $R_1^A(\alpha), \ldots, R_8^A(\alpha)$ depend only on the minimum and maximum of the distances of i and j from the new x axis. Hence, if x_1 and x_2 have opposite signs and y_1 and y_2 have the same sign, then let

$$\underline{x} := -|x_1|, \quad \overline{x} := |x_2|, \quad \underline{y} := |y_1| \wedge |y_2|, \quad \overline{y} := |y_1| \vee |y_2|, \quad a' := a, \quad \text{and} \quad b' := b \tag{107}$$

Otherwise, if x_1 and x_2 have the same sign and y_1 and y_2 have opposite signs, then let

$$\underline{x} := -|y_1|, \quad \overline{x} := |y_2|, \quad \underline{y} := |x_1| \wedge |x_2|, \quad \overline{y} := |x_1| \vee |x_2|, \quad a' := b, \quad \text{and} \quad b' := a \tag{108}$$

Then

$$\begin{aligned}
R_1^A(\alpha) &= -a'\alpha + a'(-\underline{x} + \overline{x} + \underline{y} + \overline{y}) + 2a'b' \\
R_2^A(\alpha) &= \left(\left(b' \wedge \frac{\alpha + \underline{x} - \overline{x} + \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2} \right) - \frac{-\alpha - \underline{x} + \overline{x} + \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2} \right) \left(a' + \frac{-\alpha + \underline{x} + \overline{x} - \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2} \right) \\
&\quad \times \mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha < 2a' + \underline{x} + \overline{x} - \underline{y} + \overline{y}\}} \\
R_3^A(\alpha) &= 2a' \left(b' - \frac{\alpha + \underline{x} - \overline{x} + \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2} \right) \mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha < 2b' - \underline{x} + \overline{x} - \underline{y} - \overline{y}\}} \\
R_4^A(\alpha) &= \left(a' - \frac{\alpha + \underline{x} + \overline{x} + \underline{y} - \overline{y}}{2} \right) \left(\left(b' \wedge \frac{\alpha + \underline{x} - \overline{x} + \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2} \right) - \frac{-\alpha - \underline{x} + \overline{x} + \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2} \right) \\
&\quad \times \mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha < 2a' - \underline{x} - \overline{x} - \underline{y} + \overline{y}\}} \\
R_5^A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2} \left(\left(a' \wedge \frac{\alpha + \underline{x} + \overline{x} + \underline{y} - \overline{y}}{2} \right) - \overline{x} \right)^2
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
R_6^A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}\left(\underline{x} - \left((-a') \vee \frac{-\alpha + \underline{x} + \overline{x} - \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2}\right)\right)^2 \\
R_7^A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}\left(\left(\underline{x} \wedge \left(b' - \frac{\alpha - \underline{x} - \overline{x} + \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2}\right)\right) - \left((-a') \vee \frac{-\alpha + \underline{x} + \overline{x} - \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2}\right)\right)^2 \\
&\quad \times \mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha < 2(a'+b') + \underline{x} + \overline{x} - \underline{y} - \overline{y}\}} \\
R_8^A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}\left(\left(a' \wedge \frac{\alpha + \underline{x} + \overline{x} + \underline{y} - \overline{y}}{2}\right) - \left(\overline{x} \vee \left(\frac{\alpha + \underline{x} + \overline{x} + \underline{y} + \overline{y}}{2} - b'\right)\right)\right)^2 \\
&\quad \times \mathbb{I}_{\{\alpha < 2(a'+b') - \underline{x} - \overline{x} - \underline{y} - \overline{y}\}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Similar to Section A.1.1, we write $\sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^A(\alpha)$ as a piecewise polynomial in α of degree at most two, and we choose $A(\alpha), B(\alpha), C_1(\alpha)$, and C_2 such that

$$
A(\alpha)\alpha^2 + B(\alpha)\alpha + C_1(\alpha) \quad = \quad \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^A(\alpha) \quad \text{and} \quad C_2 \quad = \quad \sum_{k=1}^{8} R_k^A.
$$

A.1.2.1 *Calculating the piecewise constant functions $A(\alpha)$, $B(\alpha)$, and $C(\alpha)$*

For easy reference to Figure 11, and without loss of generality, assume that $x_1 = \underline{x}$, $x_2 = \overline{x}$, $y_1 = \underline{y}$, $y_2 = \overline{y}$, $a = a'$, and $b = b'$. Note that in this case $R_5^A(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_6^A(\alpha) > 0$ for all $\alpha \in (|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$. As in Section A.1.1, when partitioning the interval $(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$ into the subintervals over which $A(\alpha)$, $B(\alpha)$, and $C(\alpha)$ are constant, we show only the cases that can occur, namely the following cases:

1. Lines 2, 4, and 6 are inside the rectangle, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \;\in\; & [|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|, \\
& (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\
& \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $R_7^A(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8^A(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{2} \\
B(\alpha) &= 0
\end{aligned}
$$

$$C_1(\alpha) = 4ab + \frac{1}{2}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2 + y_1^2 + y_2^2\right) - x_1x_2 - y_1y_2.$$

2. Lines 2 and 4 are inside the rectangle, but line 6 is outside, that is,

$$\begin{aligned} \alpha \in \; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2), \\ & (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)) \end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_7^A(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8^A(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned} A(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{4} \\ B(\alpha) &= -a - \frac{1}{2}(x_1 + x_2) \\ C_1(\alpha) &= a(a + 4b + x_1 + x_2) + \frac{3}{4}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2\right) + \frac{1}{4}(y_2 - y_1)^2 - \frac{1}{2}x_1x_2. \end{aligned}$$

3. Lines 4 and 6 are inside the rectangle, but line 2 is outside, that is,

$$\begin{aligned} \alpha \in \; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2), \\ & (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)) \end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_7^A(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8^A(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned} A(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{4} \\ B(\alpha) &= -a + \frac{1}{2}(x_1 + x_2) \\ C_1(\alpha) &= a(a + 4b - x_1 - x_2) + \frac{3}{4}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2\right) + \frac{1}{4}(y_2 - y_1)^2 - \frac{1}{2}x_1x_2. \end{aligned}$$

4. Lines 2 and 6 are inside the rectangle, but line 4 is outside, that is,

$$\begin{aligned} \alpha \in \; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\ & (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)) \end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_7^A(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8^A(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$A(\alpha) = -\frac{1}{4}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
B(\alpha) &= -b + \frac{1}{2}(y_1 + y_2) \\
C_1(\alpha) &= b(4a + b - y_1 - y_2) + \frac{1}{4}(x_2 - x_1)^2 + \frac{3}{4}\left(y_1^2 + y_2^2\right) - \frac{1}{2}y_1 y_2.
\end{aligned}
$$

5. Line 2 is inside the rectangle, but lines 4 and 6 are outside, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in \; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\
& (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $R_8(\alpha) > 0$. The following two subcases can occur:

(a) Part of line 5 is inside the rectangle, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in \; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\
& (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (2(a + b) + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \\
& \wedge(|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $R_7(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= 0 \\
B(\alpha) &= -(a + b) - \frac{1}{2}(x_1 + x_2) + \frac{1}{2}(y_1 + y_2) \\
C_1(\alpha) &= a^2 + b^2 + 4ab + a(x_1 + x_2) - b(y_1 + y_2) + \frac{1}{2}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2 + y_1^2 + y_2^2\right).
\end{aligned}
$$

(b) Line 5 is outside the rectangle, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in \; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\
& \vee(2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \vee (2(a + b) + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\
& (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $R_7(\alpha) = 0$. Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{8} \\
B(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{2}(a + b) - \frac{1}{4}(x_1 + x_2) + \frac{1}{4}(y_1 + y_2)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
C_1(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{2}\left(a^2+b^2\right)+3ab+\frac{1}{2}(a-b)(x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2) \\
&+\frac{3}{8}\left(x_1^2+x_2^2+y_1^2+y_2^2\right)+\frac{1}{4}\left(-x_1x_2+x_1y_1+x_1y_2+x_2y_1+x_2y_2-y_1y_2\right).
\end{aligned}
$$

6. Line 6 is inside the rectangle, but lines 2 and 4 are outside, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|)\vee(2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2)\vee(2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2), \\
& (2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2)\wedge(|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|))
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $R_7(\alpha)>0$. The following two subcases can occur:

(a) Part of line 3 is inside the rectangle, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|)\vee(2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2)\vee(2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2), \\
& (2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2)\wedge(2(a+b)-x_1-x_2-y_1-y_2) \\
& \wedge(|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|))
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $R_8(\alpha)>0$. Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= 0 \\
B(\alpha) &= -(a+b)+\frac{1}{2}(x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2) \\
C_1(\alpha) &= 4ab+a^2+b^2-a(x_1+x_2)-b(y_1+y_2)+\frac{1}{2}(x_1^2+x_2^2+y_1^2+y_2^2).
\end{aligned}
$$

(b) Line 3 is outside the rectangle, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|)\vee(2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2) \\
& \vee(2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2)\vee(2(a+b)-x_1-x_2-y_1-y_2), \\
& (2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2)\wedge(|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|))
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $R_8(\alpha)=0$. Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{8} \\
B(\alpha) &= -\frac{1}{2}(a+b)+\frac{1}{4}(x_1+x_2)+\frac{1}{4}(y_1+y_2)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
C_1(\alpha) &= 3ab + \frac{1}{2}(a^2+b^2) + \frac{1}{2}(b-a)(x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2) \\
&\quad + \frac{1}{2}(x_1^2+x_2^2+y_1^2+y_2^2) - \frac{1}{8}(x_1+x_2+y_1+y_2)^2.
\end{aligned}
$$

7. Line 4 is inside the rectangle, but lines 2 and 6 are outside, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|) \vee (2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2) \vee (2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2), \\
& (2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2) \wedge (|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|))
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $R_7(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= 0 \\
B(\alpha) &= -2a \\
C_1(\alpha) &= 4ab + 2a^2 + x_1^2 + x_2^2.
\end{aligned}
$$

8. Lines 2, 4, and 6 are outside the rectangle, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|) \vee (2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2) \vee (2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2) \\
& \vee(2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2), |x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|)
\end{aligned}
$$

The following four subcases can occur:

(a) Parts of lines 3 and 5 are inside the rectangle, that is,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \in\ & [(|x_2-x_1|+|y_2-y_1|) \vee (2a-x_1-x_2-y_1+y_2) \vee (2a+x_1+x_2-y_1+y_2) \\
& \vee(2b-x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2), (2(a+b)+x_1+x_2-y_1-y_2) \\
& \wedge(2(a+b)-x_1-x_2-y_1-y_2) \wedge (|x_1|+|x_2|+|y_1|+|y_2|))
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies that $R_7(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{4} \\
B(\alpha) &= -2a - b + \frac{1}{2}(y_1+y_2) \\
C_1(\alpha) &= 2a^2 + b^2 + 4ab - b(y_1+y_2) + \frac{1}{2}\left(x_1^2+x_2^2\right) + \frac{1}{4}(x_1+x_2)^2 + \frac{1}{4}(y_1+y_2)^2
\end{aligned}
$$

(b) Part of line 5 is inside the rectangle and line 3 is outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \in \; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\ & \qquad \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \vee (2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\ & \qquad (2(a+b) + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_7(\alpha) > 0$ and $R_8(\alpha) = 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{8} \\ B(\alpha) &= -\frac{3}{2}a - \frac{1}{2}b - \frac{1}{4}(x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \\ C_1(\alpha) &= \frac{3}{2}a^2 + \frac{1}{2}b^2 + 3ab + \frac{1}{2}a(x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) + \frac{1}{2}b(x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{2}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2\right) + \frac{1}{8}(x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2)^2 .\end{aligned}$$

(c) Part of line 3 is inside the rectangle and line 5 is outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha \in \; & [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \\ & \qquad \vee (2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \vee (2(a+b) + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2), \\ & \qquad (2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \wedge (|x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|))\end{aligned}$$

which implies that $R_7(\alpha) = 0$ and $R_8(\alpha) > 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned}A(\alpha) &= \frac{1}{8} \\ B(\alpha) &= -\frac{3}{2}a - \frac{1}{2}b + \frac{1}{4}(x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ C_1(\alpha) &= \frac{3}{2}a^2 + \frac{1}{2}b^2 + 3ab - \frac{1}{2}a(x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) - \frac{1}{2}b(x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2) \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{2}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2\right) + \frac{1}{8}(x_1 + x_2 + y_1 + y_2)^2 .\end{aligned}$$

(d) Lines 3 and 5 are outside the rectangle, that is,

$$\alpha \in [(|x_2 - x_1| + |y_2 - y_1|) \vee (2a - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 + y_2) \vee (2a + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 + y_2)$$

$$\vee(2b - x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2) \vee (2(a+b) + x_1 + x_2 - y_1 - y_2)$$
$$\vee(2(a+b) - x_1 - x_2 - y_1 - y_2), |x_1| + |x_2| + |y_1| + |y_2|)$$

which implies that $R_7(\alpha) = 0$ and $R_8(\alpha) = 0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned} A(\alpha) &= 0 \\ B(\alpha) &= -a \\ C_1(\alpha) &= a^2 + 2ab + a(y_1 + y_2) + \frac{1}{2}\left(x_1^2 + x_2^2\right). \end{aligned}$$

A.2 Computational Results and Data

A.2.1 Computational Results for MILP formulation

For very small problem instances, the mixed integer linear program (3) can be solved with available software. Table 4 shows CPU times for some small instances obtained with CPlex 9.0. All instances were randomly generated, with a single scenario each.

Number of Origins	4	5	6
Number of Destinations	4	5	6
Number of Candidate Terminals	3	3	3
Instance 1	62.62	182.23	43164.04
Instance 2	308.35	36895.92	22475.01
Instance 3	31.65	692.00	Stop after 187643.12
Instance 4	184.23	5002.46	Stop after 115830.61
Instance 5	490.47	1873.43	Stop after 379172.34
Mean	215.46	8929.21	N/A
Standard Deviation	188.67	15745.65	N/A

Table 4: CPU time in seconds for MILP formulation

A.2.2 Data Sets

The data sets used for the results reported in Sections 2.7 and A.2.1 can be found at `http://www.scl.gatech.edu/research/casestudies/`. The distances d_{ij} between pairs of points i and j were given by the least great-circle distances in miles between the pairs of points. Also, for the purpose of the continuous approximation, (latitude, longitude) coordinates were converted to Cartesian (x, y) coordinates according to the Albers Equal Area Conic Projection Method. The L_1 metric between pairs of (x, y) coordinates were multiplied with a factor of 3150, which gives approximately the least great-circle distance in miles between the pair of points. All scenarios were assigned equal weights $p(\omega)$. In addition, the following parameters were used:

Fixed cost per terminal per time period $c_m = \$10000$.

Transportation cost per vehicle-mile = \$1.

Cost per time period for each vehicle based at each terminal $C_v = \$100$.

Cost for each vehicle that is used during a time period $c_v = \$100$.

Vehicle capacity used in detailed vehicle routing calculations $Q_v = 3000\text{ft}^3$.

Vehicle capacity used in continuous approximation calculations $Q_v = 2900\text{ft}^3$.

β-coefficient for approximating detour distance $\beta = 2$.

The rectangle $[-a, a] \times [-b, b]$ containing the terminals was chosen as follows: Let (x_i, y_i) denote the coordinates of origin or destination i. Let $\overline{x} := \max_{i \in \mathcal{O} \cup \mathcal{D}} x_i$, $\underline{x} := \min_{i \in \mathcal{O} \cup \mathcal{D}} x_i$, $\overline{y} := \max_{i \in \mathcal{O} \cup \mathcal{D}} y_i$, $\underline{y} := \min_{i \in \mathcal{O} \cup \mathcal{D}} y_i$. Then $a := (\overline{x} - \underline{x})/2$ and $b := (\overline{y} - \underline{y})/2$.

APPENDIX B

PROOF

B.1 Proof of Models for Option-contracting Strategy with Buyers' Learning

Proof of Theorem 1 First of all, the buyer's objective function in the second stage is

$$\begin{aligned} R(q_o, q_s) &= U(q) - Kq_o - pq_s \\ &= -\frac{1}{2b}(q_o + q_s)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(q_o + q_s) - Kq_o - pq_s \end{aligned}$$

Suppose that $q \leq Q$ and $p \leq K$. Then

$$\begin{aligned} q_o &= 0 \\ q_s &= \begin{cases} a - bp & \text{if } p \leq \frac{a}{b} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases} \end{aligned}$$

, since $\frac{dR(q_o,q_s)}{dq_s}|_{q_o=0} = -\frac{1}{b}q_s + (\frac{a}{b} - p) = 0$. Equivalently,

$$q_o + q_s = \begin{cases} 0 + 0 & \text{if } \frac{a}{b} \leq p \leq K \\ 0 + (a - bp) & \text{if } p \leq \frac{a}{b} \text{ and } p \leq K \end{cases}$$

Suppose that $q \leq Q$ and $p \geq K$. Then

$$\begin{aligned} q_o &= \begin{cases} a - bK & \text{if } K \leq \frac{a}{b} \text{ and } a - bK \leq Q \\ Q & \text{if } K \leq \frac{a}{b} \text{ and } a - bK \geq Q \\ 0 & \text{if } K \geq \frac{a}{b} \end{cases} \\ q_s &= 0 \end{aligned}$$

, since $\frac{dR(q_o,q_s)}{dq_o}|_{q_s=0} = -\frac{1}{b}q_o + (\frac{a}{b} - K) = 0$. Equivalently,

$$q_o + q_s = \begin{cases} 0 + 0 & \text{if } \frac{a}{b} \le K \le p \\ (a - bK) + 0 & \text{if } \frac{a-Q}{b} \le K \le \frac{a}{b} \text{ and } K \le p \\ Q + 0 & \text{if } K \le \frac{a-Q}{b} \text{ and } K \le p \end{cases}$$

Suppose that $q \ge Q$ and $p \ge K$. Then $a - bK \ge Q$ and thus $q_o = Q$ and

$$\begin{aligned} R(Q, q_s) &= -\frac{1}{2b}(q_s + Q)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(q_s + Q) - K \cdot Q - p \cdot q_s \\ &= -\frac{1}{2b}(q_s + Q)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(q_S + Q) - K \cdot Q - p \cdot q_s \\ \frac{dR(q_o, q_s)}{dq_s}|_{q_o=Q} &= -\frac{1}{b}(q_s + Q) + (\frac{a}{b} - p) \end{aligned}$$

Therefore,

$$q_s = \begin{cases} a - bp - Q & \text{if } p \le \frac{a-Q}{b} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

Equivalently,

$$q_o + q_s = \begin{cases} Q + (a - bp - Q) & \text{if } K \le p \le \frac{a-Q}{b} \\ Q + 0 & \text{if } K \le \frac{a-Q}{b} \le p \end{cases}$$

Suppose that $q \ge Q$ and $p \le K$. Then, $q_o = 0$

$$\begin{aligned} R(0, q_s) &= -\frac{1}{2b}(q_s + 0)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(q_s + 0) - K \cdot 0 - p \cdot q_s \\ &= -\frac{1}{2b}(q_s + 0)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(q_s + 0) - K \cdot 0 - p \cdot q_s \\ \frac{dR(q_o, q_s)}{dq_s}|_{q_o=0} &= -\frac{1}{b}q_s + (\frac{a}{b} - p) \end{aligned}$$

Therefore,

$$q_s = \begin{cases} a - bp & \text{if } p \le \frac{a-Q}{b} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

Equivalently,

$$q_o + q_s = \begin{cases} 0 + (a - bp) & \text{if } p \le K \text{ and } p \le \frac{a-Q}{b} \\ 0 + 0 & \text{if } \frac{a-Q}{b} \le p \le K \end{cases}$$

Thus, the result holds. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 1 For any $Q > 0$ and $h \in \mathbb{R}$ such that $Q + h \geq 0$,

$$\begin{aligned}
& f(Q+h) - f(Q) \\
= \; & -\pi(Q+h) + \int_0^{bK}\int_0^{\frac{a}{b}} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bp)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bp) - p(a-bp)dH_n(p)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{bK}^{Q+bK+h}\Big(\int_0^K (\frac{b}{2}p^2 - ap + \frac{a^2}{2b})dH_n(p) + \int_K^\infty (\frac{a^2}{2b} - aK + \frac{bK^2}{2})dH_n(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK+h}^\infty \Big(\int_0^{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}} (\frac{b}{2}p^2 - ap + \frac{a^2}{2b})dH_n(p) + (\frac{a}{b}(Q+h) - \frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b})\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^\infty dH_n(p) \\
& \qquad -(Q+h)\cdot\int_K^\infty K dH_n(p) + (Q+h)\cdot\int_K^{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}} p dH_n(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \pi Q - \int_0^{bK}\int_0^{\frac{a}{b}} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bp)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bp) - p(a-bp)dH_n(p)dF(a) \\
& - \int_{bK}^{Q+bK}\Big(\int_0^K (\frac{b}{2}p^2 - ap + \frac{a^2}{2b})dH_n(p) + \int_K^\infty (\frac{a^2}{2b} - aK + \frac{bK^2}{2})dH_n(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q+bK}^\infty \Big(\int_0^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (\frac{b}{2}p^2 - ap + \frac{a^2}{2b})dH_n(p) + (\frac{a}{b}Q - \frac{Q^2}{2b})\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^\infty dH_n(p) - Q\cdot\int_K^\infty K dH_n(p) \\
& \qquad + Q\cdot\int_K^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} p dH_n(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + \int_{Q+bK}^\infty \Big(-\int_0^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (\frac{a^2}{2b} - ap + \frac{bp^2}{2})dH(p) + (\frac{a}{b}(Q+h) - \frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b})\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} dH(p) \\
& + h(\frac{a-Q}{b} - \frac{h}{2b})\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^\infty dH(p) - h\int_K^\infty K dH(p) - (Q+h)\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} p dH(p) \\
& + h\int_K^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} p dH(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\Big(\int_0^{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}} (\frac{a^2}{2b} - ap + \frac{bp^2}{2})dH(p) + (\frac{a}{b}(Q+h) - \frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b})\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^\infty dH(p) \\
& \qquad -(Q+h)\int_K^\infty K dH(p) + (Q+h)\int_K^{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}} p dH(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\Big(\int_0^K (\frac{a^2}{2b} - ap + \frac{bp^2}{2})dH(p) + \int_K^\infty (\frac{a^2}{2b} - aK + \frac{bK^2}{2})dH(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + \int_{Q+bK}^\infty \Big(-\int_0^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (\frac{a^2}{2b} - ap + \frac{bp^2}{2})dH(p) + (\frac{a}{b}(Q+h) - \frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b})\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} dH(p)
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& +h(\frac{a-Q}{b}-\frac{h}{2b})\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} dH(p) - h\int_K^{\infty} K dH(p) - (Q+h)\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} p dH(p) \\
& +h\int_K^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} p dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\Big(\int_0^{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}} -(\frac{a^2}{2b}-ap+\frac{bp^2}{2})dH(p) - (\frac{a}{b}(Q+h)-\frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b})\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\infty} dH(p) \\
& \quad +(Q+h)\int_K^{\infty} K dH(p) - (Q+h)\int_K^{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}} p dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\Big(\int_0^K (\frac{a^2}{2b}-ap+\frac{bp^2}{2})dH(p) + \int_K^{\infty}(\frac{a^2}{2b}-aK+\frac{bK^2}{2})dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
= & -\pi h + h\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_K^{\infty}(p-K)dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(-\frac{a^2}{2b}+ap-\frac{bp^2}{2}+\frac{a}{b}(Q+h)-\frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b}-(Q+h)p)dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
& -\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{2b} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K}(\frac{a^2}{2b}-ap+\frac{bp^2}{2}-\frac{a}{b}(Q+h)+\frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b}+(Q+h)p)dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\Big(-\int_0^K(\frac{a^2}{2b}-ap+\frac{bp^2}{2})dH(p) - (\frac{a}{b}(Q+h)-\frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b})\int_K^{\infty} dH(p) \\
& +(Q+h)\int_K^{\infty} K dH(p) + \int_0^K(\frac{a^2}{2b}-ap+\frac{bp^2}{2})dH(p) + \int_K^{\infty}(\frac{a^2}{2b}-aK+\frac{bK^2}{2})dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
= & -\pi h + h\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_K^{\infty}(p-K)dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(-\frac{bp^2}{2}+(a-Q-h)p-\frac{a^2}{2b}+\frac{a}{b}(Q+h)-\frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b})dH(p) dF(a) \\
& -\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{2b} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K}(\frac{bp^2}{2}-(a-Q-h)p+\frac{a^2}{2b}-\frac{a}{b}(Q+h)+\frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b})dH(p) dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\Big(-(\frac{a}{b}(Q+h)-\frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b})\int_K^{\infty} dH(p) + (Q+h)\int_K^{\infty} K dH(p) \\
& +\int_K^{\infty}(\frac{a^2}{2b}-aK+\frac{bK^2}{2})dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
= & -\pi h + h\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_K^{\infty}(p-K)dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})dH(p)\Big) dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (-\frac{bp^2}{2} + (a-Q-h)p - \frac{(a-Q-h)^2}{2b}) dH(p) dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} \frac{h^2}{2b} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h} \int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K} (\frac{bp^2}{2} - (a-Q-h)p + \frac{(a-Q-h)^2}{2b}) dH(p) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h} \int_{K}^{\infty} (\frac{a^2}{2b} - aK + \frac{bK^2}{2} - (\frac{a}{b}(Q+h) - \frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b}) + (Q+h)K) dH(p) dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + h \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_{K}^{\infty} (p-K) dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b}) dH(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (-\frac{bp^2}{2} + (a-Q-h)p - \frac{(a-Q-h)^2}{2b}) dH(p) dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} \frac{h^2}{2b} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h} \int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K} (\frac{bp^2}{2} - (a-Q-h)p + \frac{(a-Q-h)^2}{2b}) dH(p) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h} \int_{K}^{\infty} (\frac{bK^2}{2} - (a-Q-h)K + \frac{a^2}{2b} - \frac{a}{b}(Q+h) + \frac{(Q+h)^2}{2b}) dH(p) dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + h \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_{K}^{\infty} (p-K) dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b}) dH(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
& -\frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p) dF(a) - \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} \frac{h^2}{2b} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& +\frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h} \int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K} (p - \frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h} \int_{K}^{\infty} (\frac{bK^2}{2} - (a-Q-h)K + \frac{(a-Q-h)^2}{2b}) dH(p) dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + h \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_{K}^{\infty} (p-K) dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b}) dH(p) \Big) dF(a) \\
& -\frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p) dF(a) - \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} \frac{h^2}{2b} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& +\frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h} \int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K} (p - \frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p) dF(a) \\
& +\frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h} \int_{K}^{\infty} (K - \frac{a-Q-h}{b}) dH(p) dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + h \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_{K}^{\infty} (p-K) dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b}) dH(p) \Big) dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$-\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)dF(a)-\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{2b}dH(p)dF(a)$$
$$+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)+\int_{K}^{\infty}(K-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})dH(p)dF(a)$$

$$\begin{aligned}
&= h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)\}dF(a)) \qquad (109)\\
&-\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)\}dF(a)\\
&-\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)\}dF(a)\\
&+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)+\int_{K}^{\infty}(K-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)\}dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

So, for any $Q \geq 0$ and any $h > 0$,

$$\begin{aligned}
& f(Q+h)-f(Q)\\
&= h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)\}dF(a))\\
&-\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)\}dF(a)\\
&-\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)\}dF(a)\\
&+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)+\int_{K}^{\infty}(K-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)\}dF(a)\\
&\leq h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)\}dF(a))
\end{aligned}$$

For the lower bound, for any $Q \geq 0$ and any $h > 0$,

$$\begin{aligned}
& f(Q+h)-f(Q)\\
&= h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)\}dF(a))\\
&-\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)\}dF(a)\\
&-\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{K}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p)-\int_K^{\infty}(K-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p)\}dF(a) \\
= \; & h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)\}dF(a)) \\
& -\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)\}dF(a) \\
& -\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\{\int_K^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p)-\int_K^{\infty}(K-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p) \\
& +\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)\}dF(a) \\
\geq \; & h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)\}dF(a)) \\
& -\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\{\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)\}dF(a) \\
& -\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\int_K^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p)-\int_K^{\infty}(K-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p) \\
& +\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)dF(a) \\
\geq \; & h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)\}dF(a))-\frac{h^2}{2b} \\
= \; & h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)\}dF(a)) \\
& -\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& -\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\{\int_K^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)-\int_K^{\infty}(K-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^2 dH(p)\}dF(a) \\
\geq \; & h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)\}dF(a)) \\
& -\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)dF(a)-\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\int_K^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)dF(a) \\
\geq \; & h(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\{\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)\}dF(a))-\frac{h^2}{2b}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
f(Q+h)-f(Q)\in h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a)\Big)-[0,\frac{h^2}{2b}]
$$

Now, using the equation (109), for any $Q \geq 0$ and $h \in \mathbb{R}$ such that $Q - h \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f(Q) - f(Q-h) \\
= \;& -\big(f(Q+(-h)) - f(Q)\big) \\
= \;& -(-h)\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ dH(p) - \int_0^{\infty} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p) dF(a)\Big) \\
& + \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) dF(a) + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} \frac{(-h)^2}{2b} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& - \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK-h} \int_{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}^{K} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) + \int_K^{\infty} (K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) dF(a) \\
= \;& h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ dH(p) - \int_0^{\infty} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p) dF(a)\Big) \\
& + \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} (-)\Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big) dF(a) + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} \frac{h^2}{2b} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& - \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK} \Big(\Big(\int_K^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big) + \int_K^{\infty} (K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
= \;& h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ dH(p) - \int_0^{\infty} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p) dF(a)\Big) \\
& - \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} \frac{h^2}{b^2} dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
& - \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK} \Big(\int_K^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) - \int_K^{\infty} (K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
= \;& h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ dH(p) - \int_0^{\infty} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p) dF(a)\Big) \\
& + \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} \frac{h^2}{b^2} dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
& - \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK} \Big(\int_K^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) - \int_K^{\infty} (K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
= \;& h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ dH(p) - \int_0^{\infty} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p) dF(a)\Big) \\
& + \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} \frac{h^2}{b^2} dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big) dF(a) \\
& + \frac{b}{2} \int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK} \Big(\int_K^{\infty} (K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) - \int_K^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big) dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

So, for any $Q \geq 0$ and any $h > 0$ such that $Q - h \geq 0$, we have the following lower bound;

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f(Q) - f(Q-h) \\
= \; & h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+}dH(p) - \int_{0}^{\infty}(p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a)\Big) \\
& + \frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}(p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK}\Big(\int_{K}^{\infty}(K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) - \int_{K}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}(p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
\\
\geq \; & h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+}dH(p) - \int_{0}^{\infty}(p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a)\Big) \\
& + \frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}(\frac{a-Q}{b} - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK}\Big(\int_{K}^{\infty}(K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) - \int_{K}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}(K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
\\
= \; & h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+}dH(p) - \int_{0}^{\infty}(p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a)\Big) \\
& + \frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)dF(a) + \frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK}\int_{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}^{\infty}(K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)dF(a) \\
\geq \; & h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+}dH(p) - \int_{0}^{\infty}(p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a)\Big)
\end{aligned}
$$

For the upper bound, for any $Q \geq 0$ and any $h > 0$ such that $Q - h \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f(Q) - f(Q-h) \\
= \; & h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+}dH(p) - \int_{0}^{\infty}(p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a)\Big) \\
& + \frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p) - \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}(p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK}\Big(\int_{K}^{\infty}(K - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p) - \int_{K}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}(p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2 dH(p)\Big)dF(a) \\
\leq \; & h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+}dH(p) - \int_{0}^{\infty}(p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a)\Big)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)-\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}(\frac{a-Q+h}{b}-\frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2dH(p)\Big)dF(a)\\
&+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK}\int_{K}^{\infty}(K-\frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2dH(p)dF(a)\\
= \;& h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+dH(p)-\int_0^{\infty}(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)dF(a)\Big)\\
&+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)dH(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK}\int_{K}^{\infty}(K-\frac{a-Q+h}{b})^2dH(p)dF(a)\\
\leq \;& h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+dH(p)-\int_0^{\infty}(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)dF(a)\Big)\\
&+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)dH(p)\Big)dF(a)\\
&+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK}\Big(\int_{K}^{\infty}(K-\frac{Q+bK-Q+h}{b})^2dH(p)\Big)dF(a)\\
= \;& h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+dH(p)-\int_0^{\infty}(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)dF(a)\Big)\\
&+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\Big(\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)dH(p)\Big)dF(a)+\frac{b}{2}\int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK}\Big(\int_{K}^{\infty}\frac{h^2}{b^2}dH(p)\Big)dF(a)\\
\leq \;& h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+dH(p)-\int_0^{\infty}(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)dF(a)\Big)+\frac{h^2}{2b}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, for any $Q \geq 0$ and any $h > 0$ such that $Q - h \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f(Q)-f(Q-h)\\
\in \;& h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)dF(a)\Big)+[0,\frac{h^2}{2b}]
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, for all $Q \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \lim_{h\to 0}\frac{f(Q+h)-f(Q)}{h}\\
\in \;& \lim_{h\to 0}\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)dF(a)+[0,\frac{h}{2b}]\Big)\\
= \;& -\pi+\int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+dH(p)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\lim_{h\to 0}\frac{f(Q)-f(Q-h)}{h}
$$

$$\begin{aligned}
&\in \lim_{h\to 0}\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+} - (p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a) - [0,\frac{h}{2b}]\Big)\\
&= -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+} - (p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

Since, for all $q \geq 0$,

$$\lim_{h\to 0}\frac{f(Q+h)-f(Q)}{h} = \lim_{h\to 0}\frac{f(Q)-f(Q-h)}{h}$$

, f is differentiable for all $Q \geq 0$. Let $\nabla f(H)(Q)$ be derivative of f at Q, given the probability distribution H. Then, for any $Q \geq 0$,

$$\nabla f(H)(Q) = -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+} - (p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a)$$

□

Proof of Theorem 2 The buyer's objective function f is concave in $Q \geq 0$ and differentiable. Its derivative at Q is

$$\nabla f(H)(Q) \quad = \quad -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^{+} - (p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}dH(p)dF(a)$$

So, the result holds. □

Proof of Theorem 3 Let p^* be the optimal solution. Suppose that $\frac{a-Q}{b} \geq K$. Then, by Theorem 3,

$$\begin{aligned}
\max \quad & p(a-bp) - c(a-bp) \\
\text{subject to} \quad & p \leq K
\end{aligned} \tag{110}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
\max \quad & p(a-bp-Q) + KQ - c(a-bp) \\
\text{subject to} \quad & K \leq p
\end{aligned} \tag{111}$$

The first derivative optimal condition for (110) is

$$a - 2bp + bc = 0$$

So, there are two cases for (110):

Case 1 *If* $K \leq \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}$*, then* $p^* = K$.

Case 2 *If* $\frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq K$*, then* $p^* = \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}$.

From (111), the objective function is

$$p(a - bp - Q) + KQ - c(a - bp)$$

and its first derivative optimal condition is

$$a - 2bp - Q + bc = 0$$

So, there are two cases for (111):

Case 1 *If* $\frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq K$*, then* $p^* = K$.

Case 2 *If* $K \leq \frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}$*, then* $p^* = \frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}$.

Suppose that $\frac{a}{b} \leq K$. Then, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \max \quad & p(a - bp) - c(a - bp) \\ \text{subject to} \quad & p \leq \frac{a}{b} \end{aligned} \tag{112}$$

The solution is $p^* = \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}$, since $F(x) = 0$ for all $x < bc$. Suppose that $\frac{a-Q}{b} \leq K$. Then, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \max \quad & p(a - bp) - c(a - bp) \\ \text{subject to} \quad & p \leq K \end{aligned} \tag{113}$$

The solution is $p^* = \min[\frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}, K]$. Comparing each case, the following conclusion is made. If $\frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq K$, then $p^* = \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}$. If $\frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \geq K$, then $p^* = \max[K, \frac{a-Q}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}]$. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 2 WLOG, assume that $0 \leq Q_1 < Q_2$.

$$\|\nabla f(H)(Q_1) - \nabla f(H)(Q_2)\|$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \|\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
&\quad - \int_{Q_2+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a)\| \\
&= \|\int_{Q_1+bK}^{Q_2+bK}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q_2+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
&\quad - \int_{Q_2+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a)\| \\
&\leq \|\int_{Q_1+bK}^{Q_2+bK}\int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dH(p)dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q_2+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a)\| \\
&\leq \|\int_{Q_1+bK}^{Q_2+bK}\int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dH(p)dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q_2+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})dH(p)dF(a)\| \\
&\leq \|\int_{Q_1+bK}^{Q_2+bK}\int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dH(p)dF(a)\| \\
&\quad + \|\int_{Q_2+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b}dH(p)dF(a)\| \\
&\leq \|\int_{Q_1+bK}^{Q_2+bK}\int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dH(p)dF(a)\| + \|\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b}\| \\
&\leq \int_{Q_1+bK}^{Q_2+bK}\int_0^{\infty}\|\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K\|dH(p)dF(a) + \|\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b}\| \\
&\leq \frac{2}{b}\|Q_2-Q_1\|
\end{aligned}
$$

So, $\nabla f(H)(Q)$ is Lipschitz continuous for all $Q \geq 0$ and equi-continuous for any $H \in \mathcal{P}$. Now, need to show that it is decreasing. Again, for $0 \leq Q_1 < Q_2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\nabla f(H)(Q_1) &= -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
&\geq -\pi + \int_{Q_2+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
&\geq -\pi + \int_{Q_2+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) = \nabla f(H)(Q_2)
\end{aligned}
$$

The first inequality holds since $(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+$ is positive for $a \geq Q_1+bK$ and also for $a \geq Q_2 + bK$. Therefore, $\nabla f(H)(Q)$ is Lipschitz continuous, equi-continuous and decreasing in $Q \geq 0$. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 3 For any $Q \geq 0$,

$$\begin{aligned}
& -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
\leq \;& -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b} - K)dH(p)dF(a) \\
= \;& -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b} - K)dF(a) \\
= \;& -\pi + \int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q-bK}{b})^+ dF(a) \\
\leq \;& -\pi + \int_0^{\infty}\frac{a}{b}dF(a) \\
\leq \;& -\pi + \frac{1}{b}M_1
\end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
& -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
\geq \;& -\pi
\end{aligned}$$

Thus, by letting $C := \max[\pi, -\pi + \frac{1}{b}M_1] < +\infty$, for any $Q \geq 0$

$$\| -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a)\| \leq C$$

$\square$

Proof of Lemma 4

$$\begin{aligned}
\nabla f(H_n)(Q) \;&:=\; -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) \\
&\leq\; -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b} - K)dF(a) \\
&=\; -\pi + \int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b} - K)^+ dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

Since $(\frac{a-Q}{b} - K)^+ \leq \frac{a}{b}$ and $\int_0^{\infty}\frac{a}{b}dF(a) = \frac{1}{b}\int_0^{\infty}adF(a) < +\infty$, by the Dominated Convergence Theorem,

$$= \quad -\pi + \int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b} - K)^+ dF(a)$$

$$\rightarrow \quad -\pi$$

as $Q \rightarrow +\infty$ $\square$

Proof of Lemma 5 For $p < K$,

$$A(Q_1)(p) = \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) = A(Q_2)(p)$$

For $p = K$,

$$\begin{aligned}
& A(Q_1)(p) \\
= \; & \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{\max[K, \frac{a-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}] \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
= \; & \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: K \leq \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K+\frac{Q_1}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
& + \int_{\{a: K+\frac{Q_1}{2b} \leq \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
= \; & \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: K \leq \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K+\frac{Q_1}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
\leq \; & \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: K \leq \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
= \; & \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: K \leq \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
& + \int_{\{a: K+\frac{Q_2}{2b} \leq \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
= \; & \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{\max[K, \frac{a-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}] \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
= \; & A(Q_2)(p)
\end{aligned}$$

For $p > K$,

$$\begin{aligned}
& A(Q_1)(p) \\
= \; & \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{\max[K, \frac{a-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}] \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
= \; & \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: K \leq \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq K+\frac{Q_1}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K \leq p\}} dF(a) \\
& + \int_{\{a: K+\frac{Q_1}{2b} \leq \frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a:K\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K+\frac{Q_1}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K\le p\}} dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{\{a:K+\frac{Q_1}{2b}\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_1}{2b}\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a:K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_1}{2b}\le p\}} dF(a) \\
&\le \int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a:K\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K+\frac{Q_1}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K\le p\}} dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{\{a:K+\frac{Q_1}{2b}\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a:K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) \\
&= \int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a:K\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K+\frac{Q_1}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K\le p\}} dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{\{a:K+\frac{Q_1}{2b}\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a:K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) \\
&= \int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a:K\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\}} 1_{\{K\le p\}} dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{\{a:K+\frac{Q_2}{2b}\le\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) \\
&= \int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\ge K\}} 1_{\{\max[K,\frac{a-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}]\le p\}} dF(a) \\
&= A(Q_2)(p)
\end{aligned}
$$

So, $A(Q_1)(p) \ge_{st} A(Q_2)(p)$ if $Q_1 < Q_2$. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 6

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\nabla f(A(Q))(Q) \\
&:= -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dA(Q)(p) dF(a) \\
&= -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q}{b}\}} (\frac{x-Q}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ - (\frac{x-Q}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dF(x) \\
&\quad + \int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q}{b}\le\frac{x-Q}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}} (\frac{x-Q}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ - (\frac{x-Q}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dF(x) dF(a) \\
&\le -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q}{b}\}} (\frac{a-Q}{b}-K) dF(x) \\
&\quad + \int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q}{b}\le\frac{x-Q}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}} (\frac{a-Q}{b}-K) dF(x) dF(a) \\
&= -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q}{b}-K) dF(x) dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= -\pi + \int_0^\infty (\frac{a-Q}{b} - K)^+ dF(a) \\
&\to -\pi
\end{aligned}
$$

by the Dominated Convergence Theorem. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 7 Suppose that $0 \le Q_1 < Q_2$. First, let's show that it is Lipschitz continuous. This holds directly from Lemma 2 since $A(Q) \in \mathcal{P}$. Now, need to show that it is strictly nonincreasing. WLOG, assume that $\nabla f(A(Q_1))(Q_1)$ and $\nabla f(A(Q_2))(Q_2)$ are not equal to π.

$$
\begin{aligned}
\nabla f(A(Q_1))(Q_1) &= -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_0^\infty \{(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\} dA(Q_1)(p) dF(a) \\
&> -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_0^\infty \{(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\} dA(Q_2)(p) dF(a) \\
&\ge -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_0^\infty \{(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\} dA(Q_2)(p) dF(a) \\
&\ge -\pi + \int_{Q_2+bK}^\infty \int_0^\infty \{(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\} dA(Q_2)(p) dF(a) \\
&= \nabla f(A(Q_2))(Q_2)
\end{aligned}
$$

The second strict inequality holds by the followings;

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_0^\infty \{(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\} dA(Q_1)(p) dF(a) \\
= {} & -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_{\{x: \frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \le \frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}} (\frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} - K)^+ - (\frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dF(x) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_{\{x: \frac{a-Q_1}{b} \le \frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}\}} (\frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} - K)^+ - (\frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dF(x) dF(a) \\
= {} & -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_{\{x: \frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \le \frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}} (\frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} - K)^+ - (\frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dF(x) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_{\{x: \frac{x-Q_2}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \le \frac{a-Q_1}{b} \le \frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}\}} (\frac{a-Q_1}{b} - K) dF(x) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_{\{x: \frac{a-Q_1}{b} \le \frac{x-Q_2}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \le \frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}\}} (\frac{a-Q_1}{b} - K) dF(x) dF(a) \\
> {} & -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^\infty \int_{\{x: \frac{x-Q_1}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \le \frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}} (\frac{x-Q_2}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} - K)^+ - (\frac{x-Q_2}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ dF(x) dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\le\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
&\qquad\qquad -(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
&+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\le\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-K)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dA(Q_2)(p)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

, where the strict inequality should hold by the following reason: suppose that

$$
\begin{aligned}
&-\pi \\
&+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+-(\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
&+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\le\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a) \\
&+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\le\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+-(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x) \\
&+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\le\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
&\qquad\qquad -(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
&+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\le\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Equivalently,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+-(\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
&+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\le\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a) \\
= \; & \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+-(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
&+\int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\le\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
&\qquad\qquad -(\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Since

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ - (\frac{x-Q_1}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ \\
\geq \quad & (\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ - (\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ \\
& (\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K) \\
\geq \quad & (\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ - (\frac{x-Q_2}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+
\end{aligned}
$$

, equivalently, for all $a \in \{a \geq 0 : F(a) > F(Q_1 + bK)\} \neq \emptyset$ and all $x \in \{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(Q_2 + 2bK - bc)\} \neq \emptyset$,

$$
\frac{a-Q_1}{b} \leq \frac{x-Q_2}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}
$$

So,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{a-Q_1}{b} \leq \frac{x-Q_2}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \quad \forall a \in \{a \geq 0 : F(a) > F(Q_1+bK)\} \\
& \qquad\qquad\qquad\qquad\quad\ \forall x \in \{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(Q_2+2bK-bc)\} \\
\text{iff} \quad & \frac{a_{\max}-Q_1}{b} \leq \frac{x-Q_2}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \quad \forall x \in \{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(Q_2+2bK-bc)\} \\
\text{iff} \quad & \frac{a_{\max}-Q_1}{b} \leq \frac{\underline{x}-Q_2}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \\
\text{iff} \quad & 2a_{\max} - 2Q_1 \leq \underline{x} - Q_2 + bc \\
\text{iff} \quad & a_{\max} - \underline{x} \leq 2Q_1 - Q_2 - a_{\max} + bc \\
\text{iff} \quad & a_{\max} - \underline{x} \leq -(a_{\max} - Q_1 - bc) - (Q_2 - Q_1)
\end{aligned}
$$

, where $a_{\max} := \inf\{a \geq Q_1 + bK : F(a) = 1\}$, $\underline{x} := \inf\{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(Q_2 + 2bK - bc)\}$. Since $0 \leq Q_1 < Q_2 \leq \overline{Q} < a_{\max}$ and $Q_1 + bc \leq Q_1 + bK \leq a_{max}$,

$$
a_{\max} - \underline{x} \leq -(a_{\max} - Q_1 - bc) - (Q_2 - Q_1) < 0
$$

But,

$$
\underline{x} = \inf\{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(Q_2 + 2bK - bc)\} \leq \inf\{x \geq Q_1 + bK : F(x) = 1\} = a_{\max}
$$

So, the strict inequality should hold. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 8 For any $n \geq 1$, given $Q_n \geq 0$, we have

$$A(Q_n)(p) = \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{\max[K, \frac{a-Q_n}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}] \leq p\}} dF(a)$$

Suppose that $p < K$. Then, clearly $A(Q_n)(p)$ converges to $A(Q^*)(p)$, since for all $n \geq 1$

$$A(Q_n)(p) = A(Q^*)(p) = \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a)$$

Suppose that $p \geq K$. Since Q_n converges to Q^*, for any $\epsilon > 0$ there exists $M < +\infty$ such that for all $n \geq M$

$$\|Q_n - Q^*\| \leq \epsilon$$

Since, for all $n \geq M$ and $p \geq K$

$$\begin{aligned}
& \|A(Q_n)(p) - A(Q^*)(p)\| \\
= \; & \| \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{\max[K, \frac{a-Q_n}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}] \leq p\}} dF(a) - \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{\max[K, \frac{a-Q^*}{2b} + \frac{c}{2}] \leq p\}} dF(a) \| \\
= \; & \| \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{K \leq p \text{ and } \frac{a-Q_n}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) - \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q^*}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) \| \\
= \; & \| \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a-Q_n}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) - \int_{\{a: \frac{a}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \geq K\}} 1_{\{K \leq p \text{ and } \frac{a-Q^*}{2b} + \frac{c}{2} \leq p\}} dF(a) \| \\
= \; & \| \int_0^\infty 1_{\{2bK - bc \leq a \leq Q_n + 2bp - bc\}} dF(a) - \int_0^\infty 1_{\{2bK - bc \leq a \leq Q^* + 2bp - bc\}} dF(a) \| \\
= \; & \| \int_0^\infty 1_{\{2bK - bc \leq a \leq Q_n + 2bp - bc\}} - 1_{\{2bK - bc \leq a \leq Q^* + 2bp - bc\}} dF(a) \| \\
\leq \; & \int_0^\infty \| 1_{\{2bK - bc \leq a \leq Q_n + 2bp - bc\}} - 1_{\{2bK - bc \leq a \leq Q^* + 2bp - bc\}} \| dF(a) \\
= \; & \|Q_n - Q^*\| \\
\leq \; & \epsilon
\end{aligned}$$

, $A(Q_n)(p)$ converges to $A(Q^*)(p)$. Thus, $A(Q_n)$ converges weakly to $A(Q^*)$. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 9 See (22). $\square$

Proof of Theorem 4 It is assumed that the buyer does not know that the spot price depends on the realized demand level, a, and the number of options bought by the buyer. So, given Q^* as the number of options bought by buyer, the seller's best response is $p(a, Q^*)$ and thus actual distribution is $A(Q^*)$ given by

$$A(Q^*)(p) = \int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le K\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\le p\}} dF(a) + \int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\ge K\}} 1_{\{\max[K,\frac{a-Q^*}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}]\le p\}} dF(a)$$

Then, Q^* is Nash-equilibrium iff the buyer's objective function, $f(A(Q^*))(Q)$, with $A(Q^*)$ is maximized at Q^*. Thus, by Lemma 7, Q^* is Nash-equilibrium iff the first derivative of $f(A(Q^*))(Q)$

$$\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q) = -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dA(Q^*)(p) dF(a)$$

is equal to zero at Q^*. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 10 Let $Z_n = \sum_{i=1}^{n}(1_{\{s_i\le p\}} - A(Q_i)(p))$, where s_i has probability distribution, $A(Q_i)(p)$. Then, this is Martingale, since $E[Z_n|\mathcal{F}_{n-1}] = E[1_{\{s_i\le p\}} - A(Q_i)(p)|\mathcal{F}_{n-1}] + Z_{n-1} = Z_{n-1}$. Also, we have

$$\sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{E[(1_{\{s_i\le p\}} - A(Q_i)(p))^2]}{i^2} \le \sum_{i=1}^{n} \frac{1}{i^2} < +\infty$$

By Martingale convergence theorem (refer to (19)), $\frac{Z_n}{n}$ converges to 0 w.p.1. So, for all $p \ge 0$,

$$\begin{aligned}
\frac{Z_n}{n} &= \frac{1}{n}\sum_{i=1}^{n}(1_{\{s_i\le p\}} - A(Q_i)(p)) = \frac{1}{n}\sum_{i=1}^{n} 1_{\{s_i\le p\}} - \frac{1}{n}\sum_{i=1}^{n} A(Q_i)(p) \\
&= H_n(p) - \frac{1}{n}\sum_{i=1}^{n} A(Q_i)(p) \to 0
\end{aligned}$$

w.p.1. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 11 Show it by contradiction. Suppose that there exist $\epsilon \in (0,1)$ and $\delta \in (0,1)$ such that for all $k \ge 1$

$$\frac{n_{j_k}(\epsilon)}{n_{j_k}} < 1 - \delta$$

Moreover, there exists subsequence $\{n_{j_{k_l}}\}_l$ such that

$$\frac{n_{j_{k_l}}(\epsilon)}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \to 1 - \delta$$

Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{n^{=}_{j_{k_l}}}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\Big(\frac{1}{n^{=}_j}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})\Big) + \frac{n^{<}_{j_{k_l}}}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\Big(\frac{1}{n^{<}_j}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})\Big) \\
= \; & \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) \\
& +\frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\Big(\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\le A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) + \sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})\Big) \\
= \; & \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\Big(\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) + \sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\le A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})\Big) \\
& +\frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \\
= \; & \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\le A(Q)(\widetilde{p})\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) + \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \\
\le \; & \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\le A(Q)(\widetilde{p})\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} 1 + \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} \Big(A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\Big) \\
= \; & \frac{n_{j_{k_l}}(\epsilon)}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\Big(\frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}(\epsilon)}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\le A(Q)(\widetilde{p})\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} 1\Big) \\
& +\frac{n_{j_{k_l}}-n_{j_{k_l}}(\epsilon)}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}-n_{j_{k_l}}(\epsilon)}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} \Big(A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\Big) \\
= \; & \frac{n_{j_{k_l}}(\epsilon)}{n_{j_{k_l}}} + \frac{n_{j_{k_l}}-n_{j_{k_l}}(\epsilon)}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\Big(A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})-\epsilon\Big) \\
= \; & \frac{n_{j_{k_l}}(\epsilon)}{n_{j_{k_l}}} + \frac{n_{j_{k_l}}-n_{j_{k_l}}(\epsilon)}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\Big(1-\epsilon_2\Big) \\
\to \; & 1-\delta+\delta\Big(1-\epsilon\Big) \\
= \; & 1-\delta\epsilon
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, for some $\delta\epsilon > 0$,

$$
\lim_{l\to\infty}\frac{n^{=}_{j_{k_l}}}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\Big(\frac{1}{n^{=}_j}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})\Big) + \frac{n^{<}_{j_{k_l}}}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\Big(\frac{1}{n^{<}_j}\sum_{i=1,Q_i\in\{Q:A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})\Big) \le 1-\delta\epsilon_2
$$

This contradicts to the hypothesis. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 12 Show this by contradiction. First, suppose that there do not exist such $\delta \in (0, \epsilon(p))$ and subsequence $\{A(Q_{m_o})(p)\}_o$. This implies that $A(Q_i)(p) \to A(\widetilde{Q})(p)$. So,

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(\widetilde{Q})(p) + \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) \\ \to \ & A(\widetilde{Q})(p) \end{aligned}$$

This makes a contraction to the hypothesis. Second, suppose that there exists $\delta \in (0, \epsilon(p))$ and subsequence $\{A(Q_{m_o})(p)\}_o$ such that

$$A(Q_{m_o})(p) < A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta$$

,and there does not exist $\epsilon_1 \in (0, 1)$ subsequence $\{n_{j_{k_l}}\}_l$ such that

$$\epsilon_1 < \frac{T(n_{j_{k_l}})}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \leq 1$$

This implies that, for any such subsequence $\{A(Q_{m_o})(p)\}_o$,

$$\frac{T(n_{j_k})}{n_{j_k}} \to 0$$

WLOG, $\{A(Q_{m_o})(p)\}_o = \{A(Q_n)(p), n \geq 1 : A(Q_n)(p) < A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta\}$. So, for $\frac{1}{2}\frac{\delta}{A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta} \in (0, \frac{1}{2})$, there exists $M < +\infty$ such that for all $k \geq M$

$$\frac{T(n_{j_k})}{n_{j_k}} < \frac{1}{2}\frac{\delta}{A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta}$$

Thus, for $k \geq M$ and $\delta \in (0, \epsilon(p))$,

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(\widetilde{Q})(p) + \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) \\ = \ & \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(\widetilde{Q})(p) \\ & + \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \Big(\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta \leq A(Q)(p) \leq 1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) + \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(p) < A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) \Big) \end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\geq \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(p) \geq A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta\}}^{n_{j_k}} (A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta) \\
&\quad + \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(p) < A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta\}}^{n_{j_k}} 0 \\
&= \frac{n_{j_k} - T(n_{j_k})}{n_{j_k}} \frac{1}{n_{j_k} - T(n_{j_k})} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(p) \geq A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta\}}^{n_{j_k}} (A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta) \\
&= \frac{n_{j_k} - T(n_{j_k})}{n_{j_k}} (A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta) \frac{1}{n_{j_k} - T(n_{j_k})} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(p) \geq A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta\}}^{n_{j_k}} 1 \\
&= \frac{n_{j_k} - T(n_{j_k})}{n_{j_k}} (A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta) \frac{1}{n_{j_k} - T(n_{j_k})} \Big(n_{j_k} - \sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_k}} 1_{\{Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(p) < A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta\}\}} \Big) \\
&= \frac{n_{j_k} - T(n_{j_k})}{n_{j_k}} (A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta) \\
&= (A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta) - \frac{k_l}{n_{j_k}} (A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta) \\
&> (A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta) - \frac{1}{2} \frac{\delta}{A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta} (A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta) \\
&= A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \frac{1}{2}\delta
\end{aligned}
$$

This again contradicts to the hypothesis. □

Proof of Lemma 13 First of all, $A(Q)$ is stochastically ordered since $A(Q_1) \leq_{st} A(Q_2)$ for $Q_1 > Q_2$. By Lemma 10, $H_{n_j}(p) - \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) \to 0$ w.p.1 for all p and thus $\frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) \to H(p)$ for all p. So,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\frac{1}{n_j} \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \\
&= \frac{1}{n_j} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) = 1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) + \frac{1}{n_j} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) < 1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \\
&= \frac{1}{n_j} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) = 1\}}^{n_j} 1 + \frac{1}{n_j} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) < 1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \\
&= \frac{n_j^{=}}{n_j} \Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{=}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) = 1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) \Big) + \frac{n_j^{<}}{n_j} \Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{<}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) < 1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \Big) \\
&\to H(\widetilde{p})
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= 1 \\
&= A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) \qquad \forall Q \geq \widetilde{Q}
\end{aligned}
$$

, where $n_j^{=} \equiv \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}$ and $n_j^{<} \equiv \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}$ and thus $n_j = n_j^{=} + n_j^{<}$. Since, for all $0 \leq p$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) &= \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) + \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) \\
&\geq \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(p) + \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p)
\end{aligned}
$$

, it is enough to show that

$$
\frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(p) + \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) \to A(\widetilde{Q})(p)
$$

Claim 1 *Suppose that*

$$
\frac{n_j^{=}}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{=}}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})\Big) + \frac{n_j^{<}}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{<}}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})\Big) \;\to\; A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) = 1
$$

Then, for any $0 \leq p < \widetilde{p}$ where $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ continuous,

$$
\frac{n_j^{=}}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{=}}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(p)\Big) + \frac{n_j^{<}}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{<}}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p)\Big) \;\to\; A(\widetilde{Q})(p)
$$

To prove Claim 1, we need to consider the two cases: $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ is discontinuous or continuous at $\widetilde{p}$. **Case 1: $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ is discontinuous at $\widetilde{p}$.** Suppose that

$$
\frac{n_j^{=}}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{=}}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})\Big) + \frac{n_j^{<}}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{<}}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p})\Big) \;\to\; A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) = 1
$$

Then, by Lemma 11, for all $\epsilon \in (0,1)$,

$$
\frac{n_j(\epsilon)}{n_j} \to 1
$$

, where $n_j(\epsilon) := \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \geq A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) - \epsilon\}}$. Choose some $\epsilon > 0$ such that $\epsilon = \frac{1}{2}\Big(A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) - \lim_{x\uparrow\widetilde{p}} A(\widetilde{Q})(x)\Big)$ and thus

$$
n_j(\epsilon) = \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \geq A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) - \epsilon\}}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \geq A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) - \frac{1}{2}\left(A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) - \lim_{x\uparrow\widetilde{p}} A(\widetilde{Q})(x)\right)\}} \\
&= \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \geq \frac{1}{2}\left(A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) + \lim_{x\uparrow\widetilde{p}} A(\widetilde{Q})(x)\right)\}} \\
&= \sum_{i=1}^{n_j} 1_{\{A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \geq A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p})\}} \\
&= n_j^{=}
\end{aligned}
$$

, since $1 = A(Q_1)(\widetilde{p}) = A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) > \lim_{x\uparrow\widetilde{p}} A(\widetilde{Q})(x) \geq A(Q_2)(\widetilde{p})$ for all Q_1, Q_2 such that $Q_1 \geq \widetilde{Q} > Q_2 \geq 0$. Thus,

$$
\frac{n_j^{=}}{n_j} \to 1
$$

Then, for any $0 \leq p < \widetilde{p}$ where $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ continuous,

$$
\frac{n_j^{=}}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{=}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i\in\{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(p)\Big) + \frac{n_j^{<}}{n_j}\Big(\frac{1}{n_j^{<}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i\in\{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p)\Big) \;\; \to \;\; A(\widetilde{Q})(p)
$$

Case 2: $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ **is continuous at** $\widetilde{p}$**.** Claim 1 can be proved by contradiction. Suppose that there exists $p \in [0, \widetilde{p})$ where $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ is continuous, $\epsilon(p) \in (0, A(\widetilde{Q})(p))$ and subsequence $\{n_{j_k}\}_k$ such that

$$
\frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i\in\{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(\widetilde{Q})(p) + \frac{1}{n_{j_k}} \sum_{i=1, Q_i\in\{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) \;\; < \;\; A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p)
$$

Then, by Lemma 12, there exists $\delta \in (0, \epsilon(p))$ and subsequence $\{A(Q_{m_o})(p)\}_o$ such that for all $o \geq 1$

$$
A(Q_{m_o})(p) < A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - \epsilon(p) + \delta
$$

and there exists $\epsilon_1 \in (0,1)$ subsequence $\{n_{j_{k_l}}\}_l$ such that

$$
\epsilon_1 < \frac{k_l}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \leq 1
$$

, where $k_l := \max\{o \geq 1 : m_o \leq n_{j_{k_l}}\}$. Since $A(\widetilde{Q})(p)$ continuous at p and $A(Q)(p)$ is increasing in Q, $A(\cdot)(p)$ continuous at $\widetilde{Q}$. So, there exists $\gamma \in (0,1)$ such that for all $o \geq 1$,

$$Q_{m_o} < \widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)$$

WLOG, let $\{Q_{m_o}\}_o = \{Q_i : Q_i < \widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)\ \forall i \geq 1\}$. Since $\widetilde{Q} = \inf\{Q : A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) = 1\} = \sup\{Q : A(Q)(\widetilde{p}) < 1\}$ and $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ is continuous at $\widetilde{p}$, there exists $\epsilon_1\epsilon_2 \in (0,1)$ such that $A(\widetilde{Q}(1-\delta))(\widetilde{p}) = A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) - \epsilon_2 = 1 - \epsilon_2$. Then, for some $\epsilon_1 > 0$, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}\leq Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) + \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}>Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \\
= & \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}\leq Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) + \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)\leq Q_i<\widetilde{Q}}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) + \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,Q_i<\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \\
\leq & \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)\leq Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) + \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)>Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \\
\leq & \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)\leq Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} 1 + \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)>Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} A(\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma))(\widetilde{p}) \\
= & \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)\leq Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} 1 + \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)>Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} (1-\epsilon_2) \\
= & \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} 1_{\{Q_i \geq \widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)\}} + \frac{1}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)>Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} (1-\epsilon_2) \\
= & \frac{n_{j_{k_l}} - k_l}{n_{j_{k_l}}} + \frac{k_l}{n_{j_{k_l}}} \frac{1}{k_l}(1-\epsilon_2) \sum_{i=1,\widetilde{Q}(1-\gamma)>Q_i}^{n_{j_{k_l}}} 1 \\
= & \frac{n_{j_{k_l}} - k_l}{n_{j_{k_l}}} + \frac{k_l}{n_{j_{k_l}}}(1-\epsilon_2) \\
= & 1 - \frac{k_l}{n_{j_{k_l}}}\epsilon_2 \\
< & 1 - \epsilon_1\epsilon_2
\end{aligned}$$

This contradicts to

$$\frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(\widetilde{p}) \quad \to \quad H(\widetilde{p}) = A(\widetilde{Q})(\widetilde{p}) = 1$$

This proves Claim 1. So, for any $0 \le p < \widetilde{p}$ where $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$is continuous,

$$\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) \\
= \ & \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) + \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) \\
\ge \ & \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(p) + \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) \\
\to \ & A(\widetilde{Q})(p)
\end{aligned}$$

So, for all $0 \le p < \widetilde{p}$ where $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ and $H(\cdot)$ are continuous,

$$\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) - H_{n_j}(p) \\
\ge \ & \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})=1\}}^{n_j} A(\widetilde{Q})(p) + \frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1, Q_i \in \{Q: A(Q)(\widetilde{p})<1\}}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) - H_{n_j}(p) \\
\to \ & A(\widetilde{Q})(p) - H(p)
\end{aligned}$$

with

$$\frac{1}{n_j}\sum_{i=1}^{n_j} A(Q_i)(p) - H_{n_j}(p) \to 0$$

Thus, for all $0 \le p < \widetilde{p}$ where $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ and $H(\cdot)$ are continuous,

$$H(p) \ge A(\widetilde{Q})(p)$$

Also, for all $0 \le p < \widetilde{p}$ where $A(\widetilde{Q})(\cdot)$ is discontinuous and $H(\cdot)$ is continuous,

$$H(p) \ge A(\widetilde{Q})(p)$$

, since continuity of $H(\cdot)$ is violated if not. Therefore, for all $0 \le p < \widetilde{p}$ where $H(\cdot)$ is continuous,

$$H(p) \ge A(\widetilde{Q})(p)$$

$\square$

Proof of Lemma 14 For any $h \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^+ \\
= \; & \nabla f(H)(Q) - \nabla f(H)(Q+h) \\
= \; & -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \pi - \int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
= \; & \int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty} -(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ + (p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
= \; & \frac{h}{b}\int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\infty} dH(p)dF(a) + \int_{Q+bK+h}^{\infty}\int_{\frac{a-Q-h}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q}{b}}(p-\frac{a-Q-h}{b})dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bK}^{Q+bK+h}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, since each term is positive for any $h > 0$, it is equal to zero iff each term is zero. So, for $h > 0$, suppose that $\{a \le Q + bK + h : F(Q + bK) < F(a)\} \neq \emptyset$. Then,

$$\nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^+ = 0 \quad \text{iff} \quad H(K) = 1$$

Suppose that $\{a \le Q + bK + h : F(Q + bK) < F(a)\} = \emptyset$. Let $\overline{a} := \inf\{a : F(Q + bK + h) < F(a)\}$.

$$\nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^+ = 0 \quad \text{iff} \quad H(\frac{\overline{a}-Q-h}{b}) = 1$$

Again, for any $h \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^- \; = \; & \nabla f(H)(Q) - \nabla f(H)(Q-h) \\
= \; & -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \pi - \int_{Q+bK-h}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q+h}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a) \\
= \; & \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty} -(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+ + (p-\frac{a-Q+h}{b})^+ dH(p)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& - \int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK} \int_0^\infty (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^+ dH(p) dF(a) \\
= & -\frac{h}{b} \int_{Q+bK}^\infty \int_{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}}^\infty dH(p) dF(a) - \int_{Q+bK}^\infty \int_{\frac{a-Q}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q+h}{b}} (p - \frac{a-Q}{b}) dH(p) dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q+bK-h}^{Q+bK} \int_0^\infty (p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q+h}{b})^+ dH(p) dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

So, by the same argument as $\nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^+$, for $h > 0$, suppose that $\{a \le Q + bK : F(Q+bK-h) < F(a)\} \ne \emptyset$. Then,

$$
\nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^- = 0 \quad \text{iff} \quad H(K) = 1
$$

Suppose that $\{a \le Q + bK : F(Q+bK-h) < F(a)\} = \emptyset$. Let $\widehat{a} := \inf\{a : F(Q+bK) < F(a)\}$. Then,

$$
\nabla^2 f(Q,H,h)^- = 0 \quad \text{iff} \quad H(\frac{\widehat{a}-Q}{b}) = 1
$$

$\square$

Proof of Theorem 5 Let $< f, g > \equiv \int_0^\infty f(Q) g(Q) d1_{\{Q^* \le Q\}}$ and then $\|f\|^2 \equiv < f, f > = \int_0^\infty f^2(Q) d1_{\{Q^* \le Q\}}$. So, $\|f\| = 0$ iff $f(Q^*) = 0$. Set $T_n \equiv \nabla f(H_n) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))$ and $Z_n = \|T_n\|^2$. We have

$$
\begin{aligned}
Z_{n+1} &= \|T_{n+1}\|^2 = \|\nabla f(H_{n+1}) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))\|^2 \\
&= \|\nabla f(H_n) + \frac{1}{n+1}(\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \le p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))\|^2 \\
&= \|\nabla f(H_n) - \nabla f(A(Q^*)) + \frac{1}{n+1}(\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \le p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n))\|^2 \\
&= \|T_n + \frac{1}{n+1}(\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \le p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n))\|^2 \\
&= Z_n + 2\frac{1}{n+1} < T_n, \nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \le p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n) > + \frac{1}{(n+1)^2}\|\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \le p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)\|^2
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $\mathcal{F}_n$ be the σ-field generated by $\{s_n, s_{n-1}, ..., s_1, \nabla f(\cdot)\}$. Thus,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& E[Z_{n+1} | \mathcal{F}_n] \\
= & E[Z_n + \frac{2}{n+1} < T_n, \nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \le p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n) >
\end{aligned}
$$

$$+\frac{1}{(n+1)^2}\|\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)\|^2]|\mathcal{F}_n]$$

$$\begin{aligned}
&= E[Z_n|\mathcal{F}_n]+E[\frac{2}{n+1}<T_n,\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)>|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&\quad +E[\frac{1}{(n+1)^2}\|\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)\|^2]|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&= Z_n+\frac{2}{n+1}E[<T_n,\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)>|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&\quad +E[\frac{1}{(n+1)^2}\|\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)\|^2]|\mathcal{F}_n]
\end{aligned}$$

, where $E[Z_n|\mathcal{F}_n]=E[\|T_n\|^2|\mathcal{F}_n]=E[\|\nabla f(H_n)-\nabla f(A(Q^*))\|^2|\mathcal{F}_n]=\|\nabla f(H_n)-\nabla f(A(Q^*))\|^2=\|T_n\|^2=Z_n$.

$$\begin{aligned}
&= Z_n+\frac{2}{n+1}E[\int_0^\infty T_n(Q)(\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n))(Q)d1_{\{Q^*\le Q\}}|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&\quad +E[\frac{1}{(n+1)^2}\|\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)\|^2]|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&= Z_n+\frac{2}{n+1}\int_0^\infty T_n(Q)E[(\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n))|\mathcal{F}_n](Q)d1_{\{Q^*\le Q\}}\\
&\quad +E[\frac{1}{(n+1)^2}\|\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)\|^2]|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&= Z_n+\frac{2}{n+1}<T_n,E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n]>\\
&\quad +E[\frac{1}{(n+1)^2}\|\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)\|^2]|\mathcal{F}_n]
\end{aligned}$$

, where the second term in the right hand side is

$$\begin{aligned}
&<T_n,E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n]>\\
&= \int_0^\infty T_n(Q)E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n](Q)d1_{\{Q^*\le Q\}}\\
&= \int_0^\infty \big(\nabla f(H_n)-\nabla f(A(Q^*))\big)(Q)E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})-\nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n](Q)d1_{\{Q^*\le Q\}}\\
&= \big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)-\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})|\mathcal{F}_n](Q^*)-\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)\big)\\
&= \big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)-\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})|\mathcal{F}_n](Q^*)-\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\\
&\quad +\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)-\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)\big)\\
&= \big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)-\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})|\mathcal{F}_n](Q^*)-\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\\
&\quad +\big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)-\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)-\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)\big)
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(\nabla f(E[1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}}|\mathcal{F}_n])(Q^*) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\\
&\quad +\big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) - \nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)\big)\\
&= \big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(\nabla f(A(Q_{n+1}))(Q^*) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\\
&\quad +\big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) - \nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)\big)\\
&\le 0
\end{aligned}
$$

Q_{n+1} is decided by $\{s_n, s_{n-1}, ..., s_1, \nabla f(\cdot)\}$, which constructs H_n and generates $\mathcal{F}_n$. If $Q_{n+1} < Q^*$, then $A(Q_{n+1}) \ge_{st} A(Q^*)$ and thus $\nabla f(A(Q_{n+1}))(Q^*) > \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) = \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)$. Otherwise, $A(Q_{n+1}) \le_{st} A(Q^*)$ and thus $\nabla f(A(Q_{n+1}))(Q^*) < \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) = \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)$. So, the last inequality holds. Moreover, for any $\epsilon > 0$ such that -$\|T_n(\omega)\|^2 = \big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) - \nabla f(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) - \nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)\big) \le -\epsilon$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&< T_n, E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n] > \qquad (116)\\
&= \big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(\nabla f(A(Q_{n+1}))(Q^*) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\\
&\quad +\big(\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) - \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)\big)\cdot\big(\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) - \nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)\big)\\
&\le -\epsilon
\end{aligned}
$$

Also, the third term in the right hand side is

$$
\begin{aligned}
&E[\|\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)\|^2|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&= E[(\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})(Q^*) - \nabla f(H_n)(Q^*))^2|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&= E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})(Q^*)^2 - 2\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1}\le p\}})(Q^*)\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) + \nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)^2|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&\le E[C^2 + 2\pi C_1 + \nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)^2|\mathcal{F}_n]\\
&\le C_2 + \nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)^2\\
&\le C_2(1 + \nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)^2)
\end{aligned}
$$

,where $C_2 := \max[1, C^2 + 2\pi C_1]$. Let $\overline{C} := C_2(1 + \|\nabla f(H_n)\|^2)$, which is finite. So, for some $0 < C < \infty$,

$$E[Z_{n+1}|\mathcal{F}_n] \leq Z_n(1 + C \cdot \frac{1}{(n+1)^2}) + 2\frac{1}{n+1} < T_n, E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \leq p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n] > + \overline{C}\frac{1}{(n+1)^2}$$

Using the "Super-Martingale" Type Lemma 15,

$$Z_n \to Z < \infty \quad a.s. \quad \text{and} \quad -\sum_n \frac{1}{n+1} < T_n, E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \leq p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n] >< \infty \quad a.s.$$

Suppose that there exists ω such that $Z(\omega) \neq 0$ with $P(\omega) > 0$. Then, there exists $\epsilon > 0$ and $N < \infty$, such that for all $n > N$, we have $\|T_n(\omega)\| \geq \epsilon$ and $\liminf - < T_n, E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \leq p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n] >\geq \epsilon > 0$ by (116). So, we have $-\sum_n \frac{1}{n+1} < T_n, E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \leq p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n] >= \infty$. But, this contradicts to $-\sum_n \frac{1}{n+1} < T_n, E[\nabla f(1_{\{s_{n+1} \leq p\}}) - \nabla f(H_n)|\mathcal{F}_n] >< \infty$ w.p.1. Therefore, $Z_n \to 0$ w.p.1 and $\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*) \to \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) = 0$ w.p.1. □

Proof of Theorem 6 Let's define

$$\overline{a}(h) := \inf\{a \in \mathbb{R} : F(\overline{Q}^* + h + bK) < F(a)\} \quad \text{for some } h > 0$$

If for some $h_1 > 0$ and all $h_2 > 0$ such that

$$\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, A(Q^*), h_1)^- = 0 \qquad \text{and} \qquad \nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, A(Q^*), h_2)^+ > 0$$

, then by Lemma 14

$$A(Q^*)(\frac{\overline{a}(0) - \overline{Q}^*}{b}) = 1 \qquad \text{and} \qquad A(Q^*)(\frac{\overline{a}(h_2) - \overline{Q}^* - h_2}{b}) < 1$$

WLOG, assume that $\overline{a}(0) > \overline{Q}^* + bK$. If not, then $\overline{a}(0) = \overline{Q}^* + bK$ and we have

$$A(Q^*)(\frac{\overline{a}(0) - \overline{Q}^*}{b}) = A(Q^*)(K) = 1$$

and for all $Q > 0$

$$\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q) = -\pi$$

This violates

$$\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, A(Q^*), h_2)^+ < 0 \quad \forall h_2 > 0$$

Thus, we can assume $\overline{a}(0) > \overline{Q}^* + bK$ and select $h_2 > 0$ such that $\overline{a}(h_2) = \overline{a}(0)$. Let $\overline{a} := \overline{a}(h_2) = \overline{a}(0)$ and

$$\widetilde{Q}_\xi \quad := \quad \inf\{Q \geq 0 : A(Q)(\frac{\overline{a} - \overline{Q}^* - \xi}{b}) = 1\} \quad \text{for some } \xi \geq 0$$

So, since

$$A(Q^*)(\frac{\overline{a} - \overline{Q}^* - h_2}{b}) < 1 = A(\widetilde{Q}_{h_2})(\frac{\widehat{a} - \overline{Q}^* - h_2}{b}) = A(\widetilde{Q}_{h_2})(\frac{\widehat{a} - \overline{Q}^*}{b})$$

, we have $Q^* < \widetilde{Q}_{h_2}$. By contradiction, suppose that there exist $\epsilon > 0$ and subsequence $\{Q_{n_j}\}_j$ such that for all $j \geq 1$

$$Q_{n_j} \notin [\underline{Q}^* - \epsilon, \overline{Q}^* + \epsilon]$$

WLOG, assume that

$$Q_{n_j} \to \overline{Q}^* + \epsilon + \delta$$

, for some $\delta > 0$. Since $\{H_{n_j}\}_j$ is the sequence of monotone increasing function on $\mathbb{R}$, there exist subsequence $\{H_{n_{j_k}}\}_k$ and an increasing function H such that

$$H_{n_{j_k}}(\cdot) \to H(\cdot) \quad \text{pointwise}$$

by Helly's selection theorem. So, we have

$$\nabla f(H_{n_{j_k}})(\cdot) \to \nabla f(H)(\cdot) \quad \text{pointwise}$$

Moreover, we have

$$\nabla f(H_{n_{j_k}})(\cdot) \to \nabla f(H)(\cdot) \quad \text{uniformly}$$

, since $\nabla f(H_{n_{j_k}})(\cdot)$ is equi-continuous by Lemma 2. Since $Q_{n_{j_k}}$ is the solution to $\nabla f(H_{n_{j_k}})(Q) = 0$ for all $k \geq 1$, $\overline{Q}^* + \epsilon + \delta$ is a solution to $\nabla f(H)(Q) = 0$. At $\overline{Q}^*$, we can consider the following four cases:

1. $\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, H^*, h)^- < 0 \quad \forall h > 0$ and $\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, H^*, h)^+ > 0 \quad \forall h > 0$
2. $\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, H^*, h)^- < 0 \quad \forall h > 0$ and

   $\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, H^*, h)^+ = 0 \quad \forall h \in [0, h_2]$ for some $h_2 > 0$
3. $\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, H^*, h)^- = 0 \quad \forall h \in [0, h_1]$ for some $h_1 > 0$ and

   $\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, H^*, h)^+ > 0 \quad \forall h > 0$
4. $\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, H^*, h)^- = 0 \quad \forall h \in [0, h_1]$ for some $h_1 > 0$ and

   $\nabla^2 f(\overline{Q}^*, H^*, h)^+ = 0 \quad \forall h \in [0, h_2]$ for some $h_2 > 0$

For the case 1 and 3, since $\nabla f(H)(Q)$ is decreasing function in $Q \geq 0$, we should have $\nabla f(H)(Q^*) > 0$. This implies that $\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)$ does not converge to 0. By Theorem 5, this contradicts to the hypothesis. For the case 2, by Lemma 14, for all $h \in [0, h_2]$,

$$H(\frac{\overline{a} - \overline{Q}^*}{b}) < 1 \quad \text{and} \quad H(\frac{\overline{a} - \overline{Q}^* - h}{b}) = 1$$

where $h_2 > 0$ is selected such that $\overline{a}(h_2) = \overline{a}(0) = \overline{a}$. Then, this violates the increasing property of H. For the case 4, by Lemma 14, for $h = \max[h_1, h_2]$,

$$H(\frac{\overline{a} - \overline{Q}^*}{b}) = 1 \quad \text{and} \quad H(\frac{\overline{a} - \overline{Q}^* - h}{b}) = 1$$

So, by Lemma 13, $H(p) \geq A(\widetilde{Q}_h)(p)$ for all $p \geq 0$ where $H(\cdot)$ is continuous, since $\widetilde{Q}_h := \inf\{Q : A(Q)(\frac{\overline{a} - \overline{Q}^* - h}{b}) = 1\}$. Since $Q^* < \widetilde{Q}_h$ and $A(\widetilde{Q}_h) \leq_{st} A(Q^*)$,

$$\nabla f(A(\widetilde{Q}_h))(Q^*) < \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)$$

, which is shown in the proof of the Lemma 7. So,

$$\nabla f(H)(Q^*) \leq \nabla f(A(\widetilde{Q}_h))(Q^*) < \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)$$

and

$$\nabla f(H_{n_{j_k}})(Q^*) \to \nabla f(H)(Q^*) < \nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)$$

This implies that $\nabla f(H_n)(Q^*)$ does not converge to $\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*)$. Thus, $\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) \neq 0$ by Theorem 5 and this contradicts to the hypothesis $\nabla f(A(Q^*))(Q^*) = 0$. Therefore, for any $\varepsilon > 0$, there exists $N(\varepsilon) < +\infty$ such that for all $n \geq N(\varepsilon)$

$$Q_n \in [\underline{Q}^* - \varepsilon, \overline{Q}^* + \varepsilon]$$

□

Proof of Corollary 1 Let $\underline{Q}^* = \overline{Q}^* = Q^*$ in Theorem 6. Then, the result holds.

□

Proof of Corollary 2 Suppose that Q_n does not converge to $Q^* = 0$. This implies that there exists $\epsilon > 0$ and subsequence $\{Q_{n_j}\}_j$ such that $\|Q_{n_j}\| \geq \epsilon$ for all $j \geq 1$. This means that $\liminf_{j\to\infty} Q_{n_j} = \epsilon$. Moreover, by the Helly's theorem, there exists H^* and $\{H_{n_{j_k}}\}_k$ such tat $H_{n_{j_k}}(p)$ converges to $H^*(p)$ for all $p \geq 0$. But, we know that $H_n(p) - \frac{1}{n}\sum_{i=1}^{n} A(Q_i)(p) \to 0$ w.p.1 for all $p \geq 0$ and thus $H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - \frac{1}{n_{j_k}}\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) \to 0$ w.p.1 for all $p \geq 0$. So,

$$\begin{aligned} H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - \frac{1}{n_{j_k}}\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) &\leq H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - \frac{1}{n_{j_k}}\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_k}} A(0)(p) \\ &= H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - A(0)(p) \\ &\to H^*(p) - A(0)(p) \end{aligned}$$

Since $H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - \frac{1}{n_{j_k}}\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) \to 0$, we have $0 \leq H^*(p) - A(0)(p)$ for $p \geq 0$ and thus $H^* \leq_{st} A(0)$. So, for all Q,

$$\nabla f(H^*)(Q) \leq \nabla f(A(0))(Q)$$

Thus, for all Q,

$$\nabla f(H^*)(Q) < 0$$

Moreover,

$$\nabla f(H_{n_{j_k}})(Q) \to \nabla f(H^*)(Q)$$

uniformly in Q as $k \to \infty$ and $Q_{n_{j_k}} \to 0$ as $k \to \infty$. However, this contradicts to $\|Q_{n_j}\| > \epsilon$ for all $j \geq 1$. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 16 Q is continuous for all $Q \geq 0$. $\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)$ is Lipschit continuous and thus is continuous.

$$\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2 dF(a) = \frac{b}{4}\int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2 1_{\{a\geq Q+bc\}}dF(a)$$

,where $(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2 1_{\{a\geq Q+bc\}}$ is convex for $Q \geq 0$ and thus $\frac{b}{4}\int_0^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2 1_{\{a\geq Q+bc\}}dF(a)$ is convex for $Q \geq 0$. So, it is continuous for $Q \geq 0$. Since the product and sum of continuous functions is continuous, the result holds. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 17 For $Q_1 < Q_2$, we have $\frac{a-Q_2}{b} < \frac{a-Q_1}{b}$ and

$$\begin{aligned}
& |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_1\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& -\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
= & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (Q_1-Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& -\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
= & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (Q_1-Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
= & \ |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& -\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
= & \ |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
\leq & \ |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
\leq & \ |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)(\frac{a-Q_2}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})dH(p)dF(a)| \\
\leq & \ |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)(\frac{Q_2+bc-Q_1}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)|
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(Q_1-Q_2)(\frac{a}{b})dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty}Q_2(\frac{Q_2+bc-Q_1}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}Q_2(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})dH(p)dF(a)| \\
\leq\ & |(Q_1-Q_2)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})|+|(Q_1-Q_2)\int_0^{\infty}\frac{a}{b}dF(a)|+|Q_2(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})|+|Q_2(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})| \\
=\ & \Big(\frac{|Q_2-Q_1|+\int_0^{\infty}adF(a)+2Q_2}{b}\Big)|Q_2-Q_1|
\end{aligned}
$$

Again, for $Q_1 < Q_2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2dF(a)-\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_2}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2dF(a)+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2-(\frac{a-Q_2}{b}-c)^2dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2dF(a)+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c+\frac{a-Q_2}{b}-c)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2dF(a)+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{2a-Q_1-Q_2}{b}-2c)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2dF(a)+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\big((\frac{2a-2bc}{b})-(\frac{Q_1+Q_2}{b})\big)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{2a-2bc}{b})(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})+(\frac{-Q_1-Q_2+2Q_2-2Q_2}{b})(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2dF(a)+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\big(\frac{2a-2Q_2-2bc}{b}+\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b}\big)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})dF(a)\Big) \\
\leq\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})^2dF(a)+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{2a}{b})(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})^2dF(a)\Big) \\
\leq\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big((\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})^2+(\frac{2E(a)}{b})(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})+(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})^2\Big) \\
=\ & \Big(\frac{(Q_2-Q_1)+E(a)}{2b}\Big)(Q_2-Q_1)
\end{aligned}
$$

So, for $Q_1 < Q_2$,

$$
|\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}Q_1\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2dF(a)
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) - \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_2}{b}-c)^2dF(a)| \\
\le\ & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_1\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& -\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2dF(a) - \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q_2}{b}-c)^2dF(a)| \\
\le\ & |(Q_1-Q_2)\Big(\frac{(Q_2-Q_1)+E(a)+2Q_2}{b}\Big)| + |\frac{1}{2}(Q_2-Q_1)\Big(\frac{(Q_2-Q_1)+E(a)}{b}\Big)| \\
& = \frac{1}{2}|Q_1-Q_2|(\frac{3|Q_2-Q_1|+3E(a)+4Q_2}{b})
\end{aligned}
$$

The result holds. □

Proof of Lemma 18 For any $Q \ge 0$ and any $H \in \mathcal{P}(\mathbb{R})$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
=\ & \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
\le\ & \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} Q(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a) + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
=\ & \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} Q(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)dF(a) + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
=\ & \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} Q(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c) + \frac{b}{4}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
=\ & \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)\{Q + \frac{b}{4}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)\}dF(a) \\
=\ & \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q-bc}{b})(\frac{3Q+a-bc}{4})dF(a) \\
=\ & \int_0^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q-bc}{b})^+(\frac{3Q+a-bc}{4})dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Moreover, as $Q \to \infty$,

$$
(\frac{a-Q-bc}{b})^+(\frac{3Q+a-bc}{4}) \to 0
$$

and

$$
(\frac{a-Q-bc}{b})^+(\frac{3Q+a-bc}{4}) \le \frac{(a-bc)^2}{3b} \le \frac{a^2}{3b} + \frac{bc}{3b}
$$

Since $\frac{(a-bc)^2}{3b} \geq 0$ and integrable due to $\int_0^\infty a^2 dF(a) < +\infty$, by the Dominated Convergence Theorem,

$$\int_0^\infty (\frac{a-Q-bc}{b})^+(\frac{3Q+a-bc}{4})dF(a) \to 0$$

, as $Q \to \infty$. $\square$

Proof of Theorem 7 Let's define $f(Q,H)$ as

$$f(Q,H) \equiv Q\int_{Q+bc}^\infty \int_0^\infty \{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^\infty (\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)$$

Then, the argument in the theorem is equivalent to the followings; suppose that Q_n is the optimizer for

$$\max_{Q\geq 0} \quad f(Q,H_n)$$

Note that $Q_n < \widetilde{Q}$ for all $n \geq 1$ by Lemma 18. If Q_n converges to Q^*, then H_n converges weakly to H^* by Lemma 8 and Lemma 9. Now, Q^* is the optimizer for

$$\max_{Q\geq 0} \quad f(Q,H^*)$$

Moreover, by Lemma 17, for $Q_1 < Q_2 \leq \widetilde{Q}$ and all $n \geq 1$,

$$\begin{aligned}
& |f(Q_1,H_n) - f(Q_2,H_n)| \\
= \; & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^\infty \int_0^\infty Q_1\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH_n(p)dF(a) + \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q_1+bc}^\infty (\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)^2 dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q_2+bc}^\infty \int_0^\infty Q_2\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH_n(p)dF(a) - \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q_2+bc}^\infty (\frac{a-Q_2}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)| \\
\leq \; & \Big(\frac{3|Q_2-Q_1| + 3E(a) + 4Q_2}{2b}\Big)|Q_1 - Q_2| \\
\leq \; & \Big(\frac{3E(a)+7\widetilde{Q}}{2b}\Big)|Q_1 - Q_2|
\end{aligned}$$

,which is equicontinuous since $\Big(\frac{3E(a)+7\widetilde{Q}}{2b}\Big) < +\infty$. Also, for $Q \geq 0$,

$$f(Q,H_n) \to f(Q,H^*) \text{ pointwise}$$

Thus, its uniform convergence in $[0, \tilde{Q}]$ is guaranteed since it is equicontinuous and pointwise convergence. Moreover, Q^* is the optimizer in $[0, \tilde{Q}]$ for

$$\max_{0 \leq Q \leq \tilde{Q}} \quad f(Q, H^*)$$

Suppose that there is Q' such that $\tilde{Q} < Q' < +\infty$ and $f(Q^*, H^*) < f^*(Q', H^*)$, which implies that $Q^* \notin argmax_{Q \geq 0} f^*(Q)$. Take $\epsilon_1 > 0$ and $\epsilon_2 > 0$ such that $f(Q', H^*) - f(Q^*, H^*) = \epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2$. For $\epsilon_1 > 0$, there exists $M_1 < +\infty$ such that $|f(Q', H^*) - f(Q', H_n)| < \epsilon_1$ for all $n \geq M_1$, since $f(Q', H_n)$ converges to $f(Q', H^*)$. For all $n \geq M_1$, $|f(Q', H^*) - f(Q', H_n)| < \epsilon_1$ implies $f(Q', H^*) - \epsilon_1 < f(Q', H_n) < f(Q', H^*) + \epsilon_1$ and $f(Q', H^*) - \epsilon_1 < f(Q', H_n) < f(Q', H^*) + \epsilon_1$ implies that $\sup_{n \geq M_1} f(Q', H_n) \leq f(Q', H^*) + \epsilon_1$ and $\inf_{n \geq M_1} f(Q', H_n) \geq f(Q', H^*) - \epsilon_1$. Moreover,

$$\inf_{n \geq M_1} f(Q', H_n) \geq f(Q', H^*) - \epsilon_1 = f(Q^*, H^*) + \epsilon_2 \tag{117}$$

,since $f(Q', H^*) - f(Q^*, H^*) = \epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2$. For $\frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2$, there exists $M_2 < +\infty$ such that $|f(Q^*, H^*) - f(Q^*, H_n)| < \frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2$ for all $n \geq M_2$. This implies

$$\sup_{n \geq M_2} f(Q^*, H_n) \leq f(Q^*, H^*) + \frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2 \tag{118}$$

For $\frac{1}{M}\frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2$, there exists $M_3 < +\infty$ such that $|Q^* - Q_n| < \frac{1}{M}\frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2$ for all $n \geq M_3$. So, by Lemma 17 and the definition of M, $|f(Q^*, H_n) - f(Q_n, H_n)| \leq |Q^* - Q_n|M \leq \frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2$. This implies that $f(Q_n, H_n) \leq f(Q^*, H_n) + \frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2$ for all $n \geq M_3$ and thus for $n \geq \max[M_2, M_3]$

$$f(Q_n, H_n) \leq f(Q^*, H_n) + \frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2 \tag{119}$$

So, with equation (118) and equation (119), we have

$$\begin{aligned} \sup_{n \geq \max[M_2, M_3]} f(Q_n, H_n) &\leq \sup_{n \geq \max[M_2, M_3]} f(Q^*, H_n) + \frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2 \\ &\leq \sup_{n \geq M_2} f(Q^*, H_n) + \frac{1}{3}\epsilon_2 \\ &\leq f(Q^*, H^*) + \frac{2}{3}\epsilon_2 \end{aligned}$$

So,

$$\begin{aligned}\sup_{n\geq \max[M_1,M_2,M_3]} f(Q_n,H_n) &\leq \sup_{n\geq \max[M_2,M_3]} f(Q_n,H_n)\\ &\leq f(Q^*,H^*)+\frac{2}{3}\epsilon_2\end{aligned}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}\inf_{n\geq \max[M_1,M_2,M_3]} f(Q',H_n) &\geq \inf_{n\geq M_1} f(Q',H_n)\\ &\geq f(Q',H^*)-\epsilon_1 = f(Q^*,H^*)+\epsilon_2\end{aligned}$$

So, for any $n > \max[M_1,M_2,M_3]$,

$$\begin{aligned}&f(Q_n,H_n) \leq \sup_{n\geq \max[M_1,M_2,M_3]} f(Q_n,H_n) \leq f(Q^*,H^*)+\frac{2}{3}\epsilon_2\\ &f(Q',H_n) \geq \inf_{n\geq \max[M_1,M_2,M_3]} f(Q_n,H_n) \geq f(Q^*,H^*)+\epsilon_2\end{aligned}$$

Therefore, $f(Q_n,H_n) < f(Q',H_n)$ which contradicts that $Q_n \in argmax_{Q\geq 0} f(Q,H_n)$. Therefore, there does not exist any $Q' > \tilde{Q}$ such that $f^*(Q') > f^*(Q^*)$. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 19 First of all, there exists $\bar{Q} \geq 0$ due to Lemma 18. If there exists $\bar{Q} \geq 0$, then, for any $H \in \mathcal{P}(\mathbb{R})$ with $H(c) < 1$, $\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)$ is strictly decreasing in Q. Consider any $Q_1 \neq Q_2$. And, WLOG, suppose that $Q_1 < Q_2$. Then

$$\begin{aligned}&\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)\\ =\;&\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)\\ &+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)\\ =\;&\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)\\ &+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)\\ &+\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+-(p-c)+(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= & \int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty \{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_2+bc}^\infty\int_0^\infty \{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_2+bc}^\infty\int_{\frac{a-Q_2}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q_1}{b}} \{p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b}\}dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q_1}{b}}^\infty\{\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b}\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
\geq & \int_{Q_2+bc}^\infty\int_0^\infty \{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& +\int_{Q_2+bc}^\infty\int_{\frac{a-Q_2}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q_1}{b}} \{p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b}\}dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q_1}{b}}^\infty\{\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b}\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
> & \int_{Q_2+bc}^\infty\int_0^\infty \{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

The last strict inequality holds, since $H(c) < 1$ and, for $Q_1 < Q_2$,

$$
\int_{Q_2+bc}^\infty\int_{\frac{a-Q_2}{b}}^{\frac{a-Q_1}{b}} \{p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b}\}dH(p)+\int_{\frac{a-Q_1}{b}}^\infty\{\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b}\}dH(p)dF(a)=0 \quad \text{iff} \quad H(c)=1
$$

Suppose that $Q^{**} = Q^*$. Then, for any $Q \geq 0$ with $Q \neq Q^*$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^\infty\int_0^\infty \{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^\infty(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
\geq & \; Q\int_{Q+bc}^\infty\int_0^\infty \{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^\infty(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

But, for $Q = 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 0\int_{0+bc}^\infty\int_0^\infty \{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-0}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{0+bc}^\infty(\frac{a-0}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
= & \frac{b}{4}\int_{bc}^\infty(\frac{a}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
= & \frac{b}{4}\int_{bc}^{Q^*+bc}(\frac{a}{b}-c)^2dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^\infty(\frac{a}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
= & \frac{b}{4}\int_{bc}^{Q^*+bc}(\frac{a}{b}-c)^2dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^\infty(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c+\frac{Q^*}{b})^2dF(a) \\
= & \frac{b}{4}\int_{bc}^{Q^*+bc}(\frac{a}{b}-c)^2dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^\infty(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2+2(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)\frac{Q^*}{b}+(\frac{Q^*}{b})^2dF(a) \\
= & \frac{b}{4}\int_{bc}^{Q^*+bc}(\frac{a}{b}-c)^2dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^\infty(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2+Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^\infty(\frac{a-Q^*}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{Q^*}{b})^2 dF(a)\\
= \;& \frac{b}{4}\int_{bc}^{Q^*+bc}(\frac{a}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{Q^*}{b})^2 dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2\\
&+Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)\\
= \;& \frac{b}{4}\int_{bc}^{\infty}\min[(\frac{a}{b}-c)^2,(\frac{Q^*}{b})^2]dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
&+Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)\\
> \;& \frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)+Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)\\
= \;& Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
\geq \;& Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
= \;& Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{x-Q^*}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-c)dF(x)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
\geq \;& Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{x-Q^*}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-c)^+-(\frac{x-Q^*}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q^*}{b})^+ dF(x)dF(a)\\
&+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
= \;& Q^*\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q^*}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

So, Q^* can not be optimizer and thus $Q^{**}\neq Q^*$ □

Proof of Theorem 8 One possible and simple probability distribution is exponential distribution with parameter $\lambda>0$. For $Q^*=0$,

$$
A(0)(p) \;:=\; \int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq c\}} 1_{\{\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq p\}}dF(a)+\int_{\{a:\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\geq c\}} 1_{\{\max[c,\frac{a}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}]\leq p\}}dF(a)
$$

and, the objective function follows

$$
\begin{aligned}
&Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
= \;& Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(\frac{x}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-c)-(\frac{x}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}\lambda e^{-\lambda x}dx\lambda e^{-\lambda a}da\\
&+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2\lambda e^{-\lambda a}da
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\{\frac{1}{2b}\frac{1}{\lambda}e^{-\lambda bc}-\frac{1}{2b}\frac{1}{\lambda}e^{-\lambda(2x-2Q-bc)}\}\lambda e^{-\lambda a}da+\frac{1}{4b}\frac{2}{\lambda^2}e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)} \\
&= Q\{\frac{1}{2b}\frac{1}{\lambda}e^{-\lambda bc}e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}-\frac{1}{2b}\frac{1}{\lambda}\frac{1}{3}e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}e^{-\lambda bc}\}+\frac{1}{4b}\frac{2}{\lambda^2}e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)} \\
&= Q\frac{1}{3b}\frac{1}{\lambda}e^{-\lambda bc}e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}+\frac{1}{4b}\frac{2}{\lambda^2}e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}
\end{aligned}
$$

This function is differentiable and thus, for any $Q \geq 0$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\frac{d}{dQ}\big(Q\frac{1}{3b}\frac{1}{\lambda}e^{-\lambda bc}e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}+\frac{1}{4b}\frac{2}{\lambda^2}e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}\big) \\
&= \frac{1}{3b}\frac{1}{\lambda}e^{-\lambda bc}e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}+Q\frac{1}{3b}\frac{1}{\lambda}e^{-\lambda bc}(-\lambda)e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}+\frac{1}{4b}\frac{2}{\lambda^2}(-\lambda)e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)} \\
&= e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}\big(\frac{1}{3b}\frac{1}{\lambda}e^{-\lambda bc}+Q\frac{1}{3b}\frac{1}{\lambda}e^{-\lambda bc}(-\lambda)+\frac{1}{4b}\frac{2}{\lambda^2}(-\lambda)\big) \\
&= e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}e^{-\lambda bc}\frac{1}{b}\big(\frac{1}{3\lambda}-Q\frac{1}{3}-\frac{1}{2\lambda}e^{\lambda bc}\big) \\
&= e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}e^{-\lambda bc}\frac{1}{b}\big(-\frac{Q}{3}+\frac{1}{3\lambda}-\frac{1}{2\lambda}e^{\lambda bc}\big) \\
&\leq e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}e^{-\lambda bc}\frac{1}{b}\big(-\frac{Q}{3}+\frac{1}{3\lambda}-\frac{1}{2\lambda}\big) \\
&= e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}e^{-\lambda bc}\frac{1}{b}\big(-\frac{Q}{3}-\frac{1}{6\lambda}\big) \\
&\leq e^{-\lambda(Q+bc)}e^{-\lambda bc}\frac{1}{b}\big(-\frac{1}{6\lambda}\big) \\
&< 0
\end{aligned}
$$

So, the objective function is strictly decreasing so that it is maximized at $Q = 0$. Therefore, there exists a probability distribution function such that $Q^{**} = Q^* = 0$.

$\square$

Proof of Example 1 By Lemma 19, there does not any $Q^* > 0$ such that $Q^{**} = Q^*$. Now, need to check if $Q^{**} = Q^* = 0$. It is enough to show that there exist any positive Q such that the objective value at this positive Q is strictly larger than the one at zero. Let this positive value be 25. So, for $Q = 25$ and $Q^* = 0$, the objective value is

$$
Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)^+-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a)
$$

$$= \quad 25\int_{25+50}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-50)^{+}-(p-(a-25))^{+}\}dA(0)(p)dF(a)+\frac{1}{4}\int_{25+50}^{\infty}(a-25-50)^{2}dF(a)$$
$$= \quad 25\int_{75}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-50)^{+}-(p-(a-25))^{+}\}dA(0)(p)dF(a)+\frac{1}{4}\int_{75}^{\infty}(a-25-50)^{2}dF(a)$$
$$= \quad 25\int_{75}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(\frac{x}{2}+\frac{50}{2}-50)^{+}-(\frac{x}{2}+\frac{50}{2}-a+25)^{+}\}dF(x)dF(a)+\frac{1}{4}\int_{75}^{\infty}(a-75)^{2}dF(a)$$
$$= \quad \frac{25}{2}\int_{75}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(x-50)^{+}-(x-2(a-50))^{+}\}dF(x)dF(a)+\frac{1}{4}\int_{75}^{\infty}(a-75)^{2}dF(a)$$

Let's see the first term for the value of a. For $75 \le a \le 150$, $(50 \le 2(a-50) \le 200)$

$$\frac{25}{2}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(x-50)^{+}-(x-2(a-50))^{+}\}dF(x)$$
$$= \quad \frac{25}{2}\Big(\int_{50}^{2(a-50)}(x-50)dF(x)+\int_{2(a-50)}^{\infty}\{2(a-50)-50\}\Big)$$
$$= \quad \frac{25}{2}\Big(\int_{50}^{2(a-50)}(x-50)dF(x)+\int_{2(a-50)}^{\infty}2(a-75)\Big)$$
$$= \quad \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{1}{2000}\frac{1}{2}(x-50)^{2}|_{50}^{2(a-50)}+\frac{1}{2000}2(a-75)x|_{2(a-50)}^{200}+(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})2(a-75)$$
$$+\frac{1}{1000}2(a-75)x|_{200}^{300}+(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})2(a-75)\Big)$$
$$= \quad \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{1}{2000}\frac{1}{2}(2(a-50)-50)^{2}+\frac{1}{2000}2(a-75)(200-2(a-50))+(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})2(a-75)$$
$$+\frac{1}{1000}2(a-75)(300-200)+(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})2(a-75)\Big)$$
$$= \quad \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{1}{4000}(2a-150)^{2}+\frac{1}{10}2(a-75)-\frac{1}{500}(a-75)(a-50)+(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})2(a-75)$$
$$+\frac{1}{10}2(a-75)+(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})2(a-75)\Big)$$
$$= \quad \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{1}{4000}(2a-150)^{2}+\frac{4(a-75)}{10}-\frac{(a-75)(a-50)}{500}+(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})4(a-75)\Big)$$

So,

$$\frac{25}{2}\int_{75}^{150}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(x-50)^{+}-(x-2(a-50))^{+}\}dF(x)dF(a)$$
$$= \quad \frac{25}{2}\int_{75}^{150}\Big(\frac{1}{4000}(2a-150)^{2}+\frac{4(a-75)}{10}-\frac{(a-75)(a-50)}{500}+(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})4(a-75)\Big)dF(a)$$
$$= \quad \frac{25}{2}\frac{1}{2000}\Big(\frac{1}{6}\frac{1}{4000}(2a-150)^{3}+\frac{1}{2}\frac{1}{10}4(a-75)^{2}-\frac{1}{500}(\frac{1}{3}a^{3}-\frac{125}{2}a^{2}+3750a)$$
$$+\frac{1}{2}(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})4(a-75)^{2}\Big)|_{75}^{150}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{1}{160}\Big(\frac{1}{24000}(150)^3 + \frac{1}{20}4(75)^2 - \frac{1}{500}(\frac{150^3}{3} - \frac{125}{2}150^2 + 3750\times 150) \\
&\quad + \frac{1}{500}(\frac{75^3}{3} - \frac{125}{2}75^2 + 3750\times 75) + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})2(75)^2\Big) \\
&= 31.646
\end{aligned}
$$

For $150 \le a \le 200$, $(200 \le 2(a-50) \le 300)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\frac{25}{2}\int_0^\infty \{(x-50)^+ - (x-2(a-50))^+\}dF(x) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\Big(\int_{50}^{200}(x-50)dF(x) + \int_{200}^{2(a-50)}(x-50)dF(x) + \int_{2(a-50)}^{\infty}2(a-75)dF(x)\Big) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{1}{2000}\frac{1}{2}(x-50)^2|_{50}^{200} + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{20})(200-50) + \frac{1}{1000}\frac{1}{2}(x-50)^2|_{200}^{2(a-50)} \\
&\qquad + \frac{1}{1000}2(a-75)x|_{2(a-50)}^{300} + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})2(a-75)\Big) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{1}{4000}(200-50)^2 + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{20})150 + \frac{1}{2000}((2(a-50)-50)^2 - (200-50)^2) \\
&\qquad + \frac{1}{500}(a-75)(300-2(a-50)) + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})2(a-75)\Big) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + \frac{4(a-75)^2 - 150^2}{2000} + \frac{(a-75)(400-2a)}{500} + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})2a\Big)
\end{aligned}
$$

So,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\frac{25}{2}\int_{75}^{150}\int_0^\infty \{(x-50)^+ - (x-2(a-50))^+\}dF(x)dF(a) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\int_{75}^{150}\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + \frac{(a-75)^2}{500} - \frac{150^2}{2000} + \frac{(a-75)(400-2a)}{500} + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})2a\Big)dF(a) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\frac{1}{2000}\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000}a + \frac{1}{3}\frac{(a-75)^3}{500} - \frac{150^2}{2000}a + \frac{1}{500}(\frac{2}{3}a^3 - 275a^2 + 30000a) + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})a^2\Big)|_{150}^{200} \\
&= \frac{1}{160}\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000}(200-15) + \frac{1}{3}\frac{(200-75)^3 - (150-75)^2}{500} - \frac{150^2}{2000}(200-150) \\
&\quad + \frac{1}{500}(\frac{2}{3}(200^3 - 150^3) - 275(200^2 - 150^2) + 30000(200-150)) + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})(200^2 - 150^2)\Big) \\
&= 51.237
\end{aligned}
$$

For $200 \le a$, $(300 \le 2(a-50))$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\frac{25}{2}\int_0^\infty \{(x-50)^+ - (x-2(a-50))^+\}dF(x) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\int_0^\infty (x-50)dF(x)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{25}{2}\Big(\int_{50}^{200}(x-50)dF(x) + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})(200-50) \\
&\quad + \int_{200}^{300}(x-50)dF(x) + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})(300-50)\Big) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{1}{2000}\frac{1}{2}(x-50)^2|_{50}^{200} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})(200-50) + \frac{1}{1000}\frac{1}{2}(x-50)^2|_{200}^{300} \\
&\quad +(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})(300-50)\Big) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})150 + \frac{1}{2000}(250^2-150^2) + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})250\Big) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})400 + \frac{250^2-150^2}{2000}\Big)
\end{aligned}
$$

So,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\frac{25}{2}\int_{75}^{150}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(x-50)^+ - (x-2(a-50))^+\}dF(x)dF(a) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}\int_{75}^{150}\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})400 + \frac{250^2-150^2}{2000}\Big)dF(a) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})400 + \frac{250^2-150^2}{2000}\Big) \\
&\quad +\frac{25}{2}\frac{1}{1000}\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})400 + \frac{250^2-150^2}{2000}\Big)a|_{200}^{300} \\
&= \frac{25}{2}(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})400 + \frac{250^2-150^2}{2000}\Big) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})400 + \frac{250^2-150^2}{2000}\Big) \\
&\quad +\frac{25}{2}\frac{1}{1000}\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})400 + \frac{250^2-150^2}{2000}\Big)(300-200) \\
&= \frac{25}{2}(\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})\Big(\frac{150^2}{4000} + (\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{10})400 + \frac{250^2-150^2}{2000}\Big) \\
&= 2088.281
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\frac{25}{2}\int_{75}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(x-50)^+ - (x-2(a-50))^+\}dF(x)dF(a) \\
&= 31.646 + 51.237 + 2088.281 \\
&= 2171.164
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, let's see the second term, which is

$$
\frac{1}{4}\int_{75}^{\infty}(a-75)^2dF(a)
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{1}{4}\Big(\int_{75}^{200} (a-75)^2 dF(a) + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})(200-75)^2 \\
&\quad + \int_{200}^{300} (a-75)^2 dF(a) + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})(300-75)^2\Big) \\
&= \frac{1}{4}\Big(\frac{1}{2000}\frac{125^2}{3} + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})(125^2 + 225^2) + \frac{1}{1000}\frac{1}{3}(225^2 - 125^2)\Big) \\
&= 7492.839
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, for $Q = 25$ and $Q^* = 0$, the objective value is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& Q \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} \{(p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+\} dA(Q^*)(p) dF(a) + \frac{b}{4} \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q}{b} - c)^2 dF(a) \\
&= Q \int_{75}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} \{(p-50)^+ - (p-a+25)^+\} dA(0)(p) dF(a) + \frac{1}{4} \int_{75}^{\infty} (a-75)^2 dF(a) \\
&= 2171.164 + 7492.839 \\
&= 9664.003
\end{aligned}
$$

For $Q = 0$, the objective value is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& Q \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} \{(p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^+\} dA(Q^*)(p) dF(a) + \frac{b}{4} \int_{Q+bc}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q}{b} - c)^2 dF(a) \\
&= 0 \int_{75}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} \{(p-50)^+ - (p-a+25)^+\} dA(0)(p) dF(a) + \frac{1}{4} \int_{75}^{\infty} (a-50)^2 dF(a) \\
&= \frac{1}{4}\Big(\int_{50}^{200} (a-50)^2 dF(a) + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})(200-50)^2 \\
&\quad + \int_{200}^{300} (a-50)^2 dF(a) + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})(300-50)^2\Big) \\
&= \frac{1}{4}\Big(\frac{1}{2000}\frac{150^2}{3} + (\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{10})(150^2 + 250^2) + \frac{1}{1000}\frac{1}{3}(250^2 - 150^2)\Big) \\
&= 9661.458
\end{aligned}
$$

So, Q^{**} can not be Q^*, which is 0. The result holds. $\square$

Proof of Theorem 9 Suppose that Q_n does not converge to $Q^* = 0$. This implies that there exists $\epsilon > 0$ and subsequence $\{Q_{n_j}\}_j$ such that $\|Q_{n_j}\| \geq \epsilon$ for all $j \geq 1$. This means that $\liminf_{j \to \infty} Q_{n_j} = \epsilon$. Moreover, by the Helly's theorem, there exists H^* and $\{H_{n_{j_k}}\}_k$ such tat $H_{n_{j_k}}(p)$ converges to $H^*(p)$ for all $p \geq 0$.

But, we know that $H_n(p) - \frac{1}{n}\sum_{i=1}^{n} A(Q_i)(p) \to 0$ w.p.1 for all $p \geq 0$ and thus $H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - \frac{1}{n_{j_k}}\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) \to 0$ w.p.1 for all $p \geq 0$. So,

$$\begin{aligned} H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - \frac{1}{n_{j_k}}\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) &\leq H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - \frac{1}{n_{j_k}}\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_k}} A(0)(p) \\ &= H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - A(0)(p) \\ &\to H^*(p) - A(0)(p) \end{aligned}$$

Since $H_{n_{j_k}}(p) - \frac{1}{n_{j_k}}\sum_{i=1}^{n_{j_k}} A(Q_i)(p) \to 0$, we have $0 \leq H^*(p) - A(0)(p)$ for $p \geq 0$ and thus $H^* \leq_{st} A(0)$. So, the objective function evaluated by H^* is

$$\begin{aligned} & Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}\}dH^*(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\ \leq\ & Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}\}dA(0)(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \end{aligned}$$

Thus,

$$Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}\}dH^*(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a)$$

is maximized at $Q = 0$. Moreover,

$$\begin{aligned} & Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}\}dH_{n_{j_k}}(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\ \to\ & Q\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q}{b})^{+}\}dH^*(p)dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-Q}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \end{aligned}$$

uniformly in Q as $k \to \infty$ and $Q_{n_{j_k}} \to 0$ as $k \to \infty$. However, this contradicts to $\|Q_{n_j}\| > \epsilon$ for all $j \geq 1$. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 20 Let $g(a,Q) \equiv \int_0^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}q^2 + \frac{a}{b}q - \pi Q - Kq_o - p(a,Q)q_s dF(a)$. Then, for any $Q \geq 0$,

$$\begin{aligned} & f_{Buyer}(Q) \\ \equiv\ & \int_0^{\infty} g(a,Q)dF(a) \end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \int_0^\infty -\frac{1}{2b}q^2 + \frac{a}{b}q - \pi Q - Kq_o - p(a,Q)q_s dF(a) \\
&= \int_0^{2bK-bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a - b\frac{a+bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a - b\frac{a+bc}{2b}) - \pi Q - K0 - \frac{a+bc}{2b}(a - b\frac{a+bc}{2b})dF(a) \\
&+ \int_{2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bK)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bK) - \pi Q - KQ - K(a - bK - Q)dF(a) \\
&+ \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty -\frac{1}{2b}(a - b\frac{a-Q+bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a - b\frac{a-Q+bc}{2b}) - \pi Q - KQ \\
&\qquad - \frac{a-Q+bc}{2b}(a - b\frac{a-Q+bc}{2b} - Q)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

So, for any given a, $g(a,Q)$ is concave in Q and thus $f_{Buyer}(Q)$ is concave in Q. Moreover, we can rearange $f_{Buyer}(Q)$ as follows

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{Buyer}(Q) \\
&= -\pi Q + \int_0^{2bK-bc} \frac{a^2 - b^2c^2}{8b}dF(a) + \int_{2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc} \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}dF(a) \\
&\quad - \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty \frac{(a+Q-bc)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc)(a-Q-bc)}{4b} - \frac{a(a+Q-bc)}{2b} + KQdF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, for any $h > 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{Buyer}(Q+h) - f_{Buyer}(Q) \\
&= -\pi(Q+h) + \int_0^{2bK-bc} \frac{a^2 - b^2c^2}{8b}dF(a) + \int_{2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}dF(a) \\
&\quad - \int_{Q+2bK+h}^\infty \Big(\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b} - \frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b} \\
&\qquad +K(Q+h)\Big)dF(a) \\
&\quad +\pi Q - \int_0^{2bK-bc} \frac{a^2 - b^2c^2}{8b}dF(a) - \int_{2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc} \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty \frac{(a+Q-bc)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc)(a-Q-bc)}{4b} - \frac{a(a+Q-bc)}{2b} + KQdF(a) \\
&= -\pi h + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \Big(\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b} \\
&\qquad - \frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h)\Big)dF(a) \\
&\quad - \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^\infty \Big(\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b} - \frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \qquad +K(Q+h)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{(a+Q-bc)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc)(a-Q-bc)}{4b} - \frac{a(a+Q-bc)}{2b} + KQdF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b} dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \Big(\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b} \\
& \qquad - \frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{(2a+2Q-2bc+h)(-h)}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc)h}{4b} + \frac{(a-Q-bc)h}{4b} \\
& \qquad - \frac{h^2}{4b} + \frac{ah}{2b} - KhdF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b} dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \Big(\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b} \\
& \qquad - \frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{-2a-2Q+2bc+2a-2Q+2bc+2a-2Q-2bc+4a}{8b} h \\
& \qquad + \frac{-h^2-2h^2}{8b} - KhdF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b} dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \Big(\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b} \\
& \qquad - \frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h)\Big)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{6a-6Q+2bc}{8b} h - \frac{3h^2}{8b} - KhdF(a) \\
= \; & h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b} - KdF(a)\Big) - \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{3}{8b} h^2 dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b} dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \Big(\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b} \\
& \qquad - \frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= \;& h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty}\frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b}-KdF(a)\Big)-\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty}\frac{3}{8b}h^2dF(a)\\
&+\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h}\Big(\frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}+\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b}+\frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b}\\
&\qquad -\frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b}+K(Q+h)\Big)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $u(a)\equiv\frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}+\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b}+\frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b}-\frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b}+K(Q+h)$. Then $u(a)$ is convex and minimized at $Q+\frac{4}{3}bK+h-\frac{1}{3}bc=Q+2bK-bc+h-\frac{2}{3}b(K-c)$. So for $0<h\leq\frac{2}{3}b(K-c)$ and $Q+2bK-bc\leq a\leq Q+2bK-bc+h$

$$
\begin{aligned}
u(a) \;=\;& \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}+\frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b}+\frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b}\\
&-\frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b}+K(Q+h)\\
\leq\;& \frac{(Q+2bK-bc+h-bK)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q+2bK-bc+h+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b}\\
&+\frac{(Q+2bK-bc+h-Q+bc-h)(Q+2bK-bc+h-Q-bc-h)}{4b}\\
&-\frac{(Q+2bK-bc+h)(Q+2bK-bc+h+Q-bc+h)}{2b}+K(Q+h)\\
=\;& \frac{(Q+bK-bc+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(2Q+2bK-2bc+2h)^2}{8b}+\frac{2bK(2bK-2bc)}{4b}\\
&-\frac{(Q+2bK-bc+h)(2Q+2bK-2bc+2h)}{2b}+K(Q+h)\\
=\;& \frac{(Q+bK-bc+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q+bK-bc+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{bK(bK-bc)}{b}\\
&-\frac{(Q+2bK-bc+h)(Q+bK-bc+h)}{b}+K(Q+h)\\
=\;& \frac{(Q+bK-bc+h)^2}{b}+\frac{bK(bK-bc)}{b}-\frac{(Q+2bK-bc+h)(Q+bK-bc+h)}{b}\\
&+K(Q+h)\\
=\;& \frac{(Q+bK-bc+h)^2}{b}+\frac{bK(bK-bc)}{b}-\frac{(Q+bK-bc+h)^2}{b}-\frac{bK(Q+bK-bc+h)}{b}\\
&+K(Q+h)\\
=\;& \frac{bK(bK-bc)}{b}-\frac{bK(Q+bK-bc+h)}{b}+K(Q+h)\\
=\;& \frac{bK(bK-bc)}{b}-\frac{bK(bK-bc)}{b}-\frac{bK(Q+h)}{b}+K(Q+h)\\
=\;& 0
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
u(a) &= \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b} \\
&\quad - \frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h) \\
&\geq \frac{(Q+2bK-bc-bK)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q+2bK-bc+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} \\
&\quad + \frac{(Q+2bK-bc-Q+bc-h)(Q+2bK-bc-Q-bc-h)}{4b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+2bK-bc)(Q+2bK-bc+Q-bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(2Q+2bK-2bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(2bK-h)(2bK-2bc-h)}{4b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+2bK-bc)(2Q+2bK-2bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(bK-bc-\frac{h}{2})}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+2bK-bc)(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})}{b} + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(bK-bc-\frac{h}{2})}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2}+bK-\frac{h}{2})(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})}{b} + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(bK-bc-\frac{h}{2})}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})^2}{b} - \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})}{b} + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(bK-bc-\frac{h}{2})}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})}{b} + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(bK-bc-\frac{h}{2})}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(Q+h+bK-bc-\frac{h}{2})}{b} \\
&\quad + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(bK-bc-\frac{h}{2})}{b} - \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(Q+h)}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(bK-bc-\frac{h}{2})}{b} + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})^2}{2b} - \frac{(bK-\frac{h}{2})(Q+h)}{b} + K(Q+h)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc+\frac{h}{2})^2}{2b} + \frac{\frac{h}{2}(Q+h)}{b} \\
&= \frac{(2Q+2bK-2bc+\frac{h}{2})(-\frac{h}{2})}{2b} + \frac{\frac{h}{2}(Q+h)}{b} \\
&= \frac{h}{2b}\Big(-Q-bK+bc-\frac{h}{4}+Q+h\Big) \\
&= \frac{h}{2b}\Big(\frac{3h}{4}-bK+bc\Big) \\
&= -\frac{1}{2}(K-c)h+\frac{3}{8b}h^2
\end{aligned}
$$

So, for $0 < h \leq \frac{2}{3}b(K-c)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&f_{Buyer}(Q+h) - f_{Buyer}(Q) \\
&\in h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b} - K\,dF(a)\Big) - \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{3h^2}{8b} dF(a) \\
&\qquad -[0, \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc+h} \frac{(K-c)h}{2} - \frac{3h^2}{8b} dF(a)]
\end{aligned}
$$

For $h \geq \frac{2}{3}b(K-c)$ and $Q+2bK-bc \leq a \leq Q+2bK-bc+h$

$$
u(a) \leq \min[0, -\frac{1}{2}(K-c)h + \frac{3}{8b}h^2] \leq 0
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
u(a) &= \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc-h)(a-Q-bc-h)}{4b} \\
&\quad - \frac{a(a+Q-bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h) \\
&\geq \frac{(Q+\frac{4}{3}bK+h-\frac{1}{3}bc-bK)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q+\frac{4}{3}bK+h-\frac{1}{3}bc+Q-bc+h)^2}{8b} \\
&\quad + \frac{(Q+\frac{4}{3}bK+h-\frac{1}{3}bc-Q+bc-h)(Q+\frac{4}{3}bK+h-\frac{1}{3}bc-Q-bc-h)}{4b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+\frac{4}{3}bK+h-\frac{1}{3}bc)(Q+\frac{4}{3}bK+h-\frac{1}{3}bc+Q-bc+h)}{2b} + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+\frac{1}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(2Q+\frac{4}{3}bK-\frac{4}{3}bc+2h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(\frac{4}{3}bK+\frac{2}{3}bc)(\frac{4}{3}bK-\frac{4}{3}bc)}{4b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+\frac{4}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)(2Q+\frac{4}{3}bK-\frac{4}{3}bc+2h)}{2b} + K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+\frac{1}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc)}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+\frac{4}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)}{b} + K(Q+h)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{(Q+\frac{1}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc)}{b} \\
&\quad -\frac{(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h+\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)}{b}+K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+\frac{1}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc)}{b} \\
&\quad -\frac{(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)^2}{b}-\frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)}{b}+K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+\frac{1}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}-\frac{(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc)}{b} \\
&\quad -\frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)}{b}+K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+\frac{1}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}-\frac{(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc)}{b} \\
&\quad -\frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc)}{b}-\frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(Q+h)}{b}+K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+\frac{1}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}-\frac{(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}-\frac{(\frac{2}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)(Q+h)}{b}+K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+\frac{1}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}-\frac{(Q+\frac{2}{3}bK-\frac{2}{3}bc+h)^2}{2b}-\frac{\frac{1}{3}bc(Q+h)}{b}+\frac{1}{3}K(Q+h) \\
&= \frac{(2Q+bK-bc+2h)(-\frac{1}{3}bK+\frac{1}{3}bc)}{2b}-\frac{c(Q+h)}{3}+\frac{1}{3}K(Q+h) \\
&= -\frac{1}{3}(K-c)(Q+\frac{1}{2}b(K-c)+h)+\frac{1}{3}(K-c)(Q+h) \\
&= -\frac{1}{6}b(K-c)^2
\end{aligned}
$$

So, for $h > \frac{2}{3}b(K-c)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{Buyer}(Q+h)-f_{Buyer}(Q) \quad &\in \quad h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty}\frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b}-KdF(a)\Big) \\
&\quad -\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty}\frac{3}{8b}h^2dF(a)-[0,\frac{1}{6}b(K-c)^2]
\end{aligned}
$$

Now,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&f_{Buyer}(Q)-f_{Buyer}(Q-h) \\
= \quad &-\pi Q+\int_0^{2bK-bc}\frac{a^2-b^2c^2}{8b}dF(a)+\int_{2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc}\frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}dF(a) \\
&-\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty}\frac{(a+Q-bc)^2}{8b}+\frac{(a-Q+bc)(a-Q-bc)}{4b}-\frac{a(a+Q-bc)}{2b}+KQdF(a) \\
&+\pi(Q-h)-\int_0^{2bK-bc}\frac{a^2-b^2c^2}{8b}dF(a)+\int_{2bK-bc}^{Q+2bK-bc-h}\frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&-\int_{Q+2bK-bc-h}^{\infty}\Big(\frac{(a+Q-bc-h)^2}{8b}+\frac{(a-Q+bc+h)(a-Q-bc+h)}{4b}\\
&\qquad\qquad -\frac{a(a+Q-bc-h)}{2b}+K(Q-h)\Big)dF(a)\\
=\;& h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty}\frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b}-KdF(a)\Big)+\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty}\frac{3}{8b}h^2dF(a)\\
&+\int_{Q+2bK-bc-h}^{Q+2bK-bc}\Big(\frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}+\frac{(a+Q-bc-h)^2}{8b}+\frac{(a-Q+bc+h)(a-Q-bc+h)}{4b}\\
&\qquad\qquad -\frac{a(a+Q-bc-h)}{2b}+K(Q-h)\Big)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $w(a)\equiv\frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}+\frac{(a+Q-bc-h)^2}{8b}+\frac{(a-Q+bc+h)(a-Q-bc+h)}{4b}-\frac{a(a+Q-bc-h)}{2b}+K(Q-h)$. Then $w(a)$ is convex in a and minimized at $Q+\frac{4}{3}bK-\frac{1}{3}bc-h=Q+2bK-bc-h-\frac{2}{3}b(K-c)$. So, for any $h>0$ and $Q+2bK-bc-h\le a\le Q+2bK-bc$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& w(a)\\
=\;& \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b}+\frac{(a+Q-bc-h)^2}{8b}+\frac{(a-Q+bc+h)(a-Q-bc+h)}{4b}\\
&-\frac{a(a+Q-bc-h)}{2b}+K(Q-h)\\
\ge\;& \frac{(Q+2bK-bc-h-bK)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q+2bK-bc-h+Q-bc-h)^2}{8b}\\
&+\frac{(Q+2bK-bc-h-Q+bc+h)(Q+2bK-bc-h-Q-bc+h)}{4b}\\
&-\frac{(Q+2bK-bc-h)(Q+2bK-bc-h+Q-bc-h)}{2b}+K(Q-h)\\
=\;& \frac{(Q+bK-bc-h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(2Q+2bK-2bc-2h)^2}{8b}+\frac{(2bK)(2bK-2bc)}{4b}\\
&-\frac{(Q+2bK-bc-h)(2Q+2bK-2bc-2h)}{2b}+K(Q-h)\\
=\;& \frac{(Q+bK-bc-h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q+bK-bc-h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(bK)(bK-bc)}{b}\\
&-\frac{(Q+2bK-bc-h)(Q+bK-bc-h)}{b}+K(Q-h)\\
=\;& \frac{(Q+bK-bc-h)^2}{b}+\frac{(bK)(bK-bc)}{b}-\frac{(Q+2bK-bc-h)(Q+bK-bc-h)}{b}\\
&+K(Q-h)\\
=\;& \frac{(Q+bK-bc-h)^2}{b}+\frac{(bK)(bK-bc)}{b}-\frac{(Q+bK-bc-h+bK)(Q+bK-bc-h)}{b}\\
&+K(Q-h)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc-h)^2}{b} + \frac{(bK)(bK-bc)}{b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc-h)^2}{b} - \frac{bK(Q+bK-bc-h)}{b} \\
&\quad +K(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{(bK)(bK-bc)}{b} - \frac{bK(Q+bK-bc-h)}{b} + K(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{(bK)(bK-bc)}{b} - \frac{bK(bK-bc)}{b} - \frac{bK(Q-h)}{b} + K(Q-h) \\
&= 0
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&w(a) \\
&= \frac{(a-bK)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a+Q-bc-h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(a-Q+bc+h)(a-Q-bc+h)}{4b} - \frac{a(a+Q-bc-h)}{2b} \\
&\quad +K(Q-h) \\
&\leq \frac{(Q+2bK-bc-bK)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q+2bK-bc+Q-bc-h)^2}{8b} \\
&\quad + \frac{(Q+2bK-bc-Q+bc+h)(Q+2bK-bc-Q-bc+h)}{4b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+2bK-bc)(Q+2bK-bc+Q-bc-h)}{2b} + K(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(2Q+2bK-2bc-h)^2}{8b} + \frac{(2bK+h)(2bK-2bc+h)}{4b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+2bK-bc)(2Q+2bK-2bc-h)}{2b} + K(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK+\frac{1}{2}h)(bK-bc+\frac{1}{2}h)}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+2bK-bc)(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h)}{b} + K(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK+\frac{1}{2}h)(bK-bc+\frac{1}{2}h)}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h+bK+\frac{1}{2}h)(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h)}{b} + K(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK+\frac{1}{2}h)(bK-bc+\frac{1}{2}h)}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(bK+\frac{1}{2}h)(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h)}{b} + K(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(bK+\frac{1}{2}h)(bK-bc+\frac{1}{2}h)}{b} \\
&\quad - \frac{(bK+\frac{1}{2}h)(Q-h+bK-bc+\frac{1}{2}h)}{b} + K(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h)^2}{2b} - \frac{(bK+\frac{1}{2}h)(Q-h)}{b} + K(Q-h)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{(Q+bK-bc)^2}{2b} - \frac{(Q+bK-bc-\frac{1}{2}h)^2}{2b} - \frac{h}{2b}h(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{(2Q+2bK-2bc-\frac{h}{2})(\frac{h}{2})}{2b} - \frac{h}{2b}(Q-h) \\
&= \frac{h}{2b}\Big(Q+bK-bc-\frac{h}{4}-Q+h\Big) \\
&= \frac{h}{2b}\Big(b(K-c)+\frac{3h}{4}\Big) \\
&= \frac{1}{2}(K-c)h+\frac{3h^2}{8b}
\end{aligned}
$$

So,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{Buyer}(Q) - f_{Buyer}(Q-h) \\
\in\ & h\Big(-\pi+\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty}\frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b}-KdF(a)\Big)+\int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty}\frac{3}{8b}h^2dF(a) \\
& \qquad +[0,\int_{Q+2bK-bc-h}^{Q+2bK-bc}\frac{1}{2}(K-c)h+\frac{3}{8b}h^2dF(a)]
\end{aligned}
$$

$\square$

Proof of Theorem 10 By Lemma 20, the result holds. $\square$

Proof of Theorem 11 First suppose that $K-c>0$. Let's consider the buyer's objective function, $f_{Buyer}(Q)$ and $p(a, Q_{E,M})$ for some $Q_{E,M}>0$ as spot price function.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{Buyer}(Q) \\
\equiv\ & \int_0^{\infty} h(a,Q)dF(a) \\
=\ & \int_0^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}q^2+\frac{a}{b}q-\pi Q-Kq_o-p(a)q_sdF(a) \\
=\ & \int_0^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}q^2+\frac{a}{b}q-\pi Q-Kq_o-p(a,Q_{E,M})q_sdF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

First consider the value of $f_{Buyer}(Q)$ on $0\le Q\le Q_{E,M}+b(K-c)$. For Nash-equilibrium to exist, the maximizer should be obtained on this area, since $K-c\ge 0$ and $Q_{E,M}\le Q_{E,M}+b(K-c)$. On $0\le Q\le Q_{E,M}+b(K-c)$, we have

$$
2Q-Q_{E,M}+bc \le Q+bK \le Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc
$$

and

$$K \leq \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} \leq \frac{a - Q}{b}$$

and thus $p(a, Q_{E,M}) = \max[K, \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}] = \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}$. So,

$$\begin{aligned}
& f_{Buyer}(Q) \\
= & \int_0^{2bK-bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a - b\frac{a+bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a - b\frac{a+bc}{2b}) - \pi Q - K0 - \frac{a+bc}{2b}(a - b\frac{a+bc}{2b})dF(a) \\
+ & \int_{2bK-bc}^{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a - bK)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a - bK) - \pi Q - KQ - K(a - bK - Q)dF(a) \\
+ & \int_{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc}^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}(a - b\frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a - b\frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b}) - \pi Q - KQ \\
& \qquad - \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b}(a - b\frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} - Q)dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

Now, $f_{Buyer}(Q)$ is linear function of Q and its first derivative is

$$-\pi + \int_{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} - KdF(a)$$

So, if

$$-\pi + \int_{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} - KdF(a) = 0$$

, then the result holds. Now suppose that $K - c = 0$. Then consider the value of $f_{Buyer}(Q)$ on $0 \leq Q \leq Q_{E,M} + b(K - c) = Q_{E,M}$. For Nash-equilibrium to exist, the maximizer should be obtained at $Q_{E,M}$. On $0 \leq Q \leq Q_{E,M}$, we have

$$2Q - Q_{E,M} + bc \leq Q + bc \leq Q_{E,M} + bc$$

and

$$K \leq \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} \leq \frac{a - Q}{b}$$

and thus $p(a, Q_{E,M}) = \max[K, \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}] = \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}$. So, for $0 \leq Q \leq Q_{E,M}$

$$\begin{aligned}
& f_{Buyer}(Q) \\
= & \int_0^{2bK-bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a - b\frac{a+bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a - b\frac{a+bc}{2b}) - \pi Q - K0 - \frac{a+bc}{2b}(a - b\frac{a+bc}{2b})dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&+ \int_{2bK-bc}^{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bK)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bK) - \pi Q - KQ - K(a-bK-Q)dF(a) \\
&+ \int_{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc}^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-b\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-b\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}) - \pi Q - KQ \\
&\qquad -\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}(a-b\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b} - Q)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Again, $f_{Buyer}(Q)$ is linear function of Q and for $h>0$

$$
f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M}) - f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M}-h) = h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b} - KdF(a)\Big)
$$

For $Q \geq Q_{E,M} + b(K-c)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{Buyer}(Q) \\
= & \int_0^{2bK-bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-b\frac{a+bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-b\frac{a+bc}{2b}) - \pi Q - K0 - \frac{a+bc}{2b}(a-b\frac{a+bc}{2b})dF(a) \\
+ & \int_{2bK-bc}^{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bK)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bK) - \pi Q - K(a-bK) \\
& \qquad -K(a-bK-a+bK)dF(a) \\
+ & \int_{Q_{E,M}+2bK-bc}^{Q+bK} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bK)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bK) - \pi Q - K(a-bK) \\
& \qquad -K(a-bK-a+bK)dF(a) \\
+ & \int_{Q+bK}^{2Q-Q_{E,M}+bc} -\frac{1}{2b}Q^2 + \frac{a}{b}Q - \pi Q - KQ - \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}0dF(a) \\
+ & \int_{2Q-Q_{E,M}+bc}^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-b\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-b\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}) - \pi Q - KQ \\
& \qquad -\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}(a-b\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b} - Q)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $K=c$ is supposed, for $Q \geq Q_{E,M}$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{Buyer}(Q) \\
= & \int_0^{bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-b\frac{a+bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-b\frac{a+bc}{2b}) - \pi Q - c0 - \frac{a+bc}{2b}(a-b\frac{a+bc}{2b})dF(a) \\
& + \int_{bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bc)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bc) - \pi Q - c(a-bc) - c(a-bc-a+bc)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q+bc} -\frac{1}{2b}(a-bc)^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a-bc) - \pi Q - c(a-bc) - c(a-bc-a+bc)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q+bc}^{2Q-Q_{E,M}+bc} -\frac{1}{2b}Q^2 + \frac{a-bc}{b}Q - \pi QdF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& + \int_{2Q-Q_{E,M}+bc}^{\infty} -\frac{1}{2b}(a - b\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b})^2 + \frac{a}{b}(a - b\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}) - cQ \\
& \qquad\qquad -\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}(a - b\frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b} - Q)dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi Q + \int_0^{bc} -\frac{(a-bc)^2}{8b} + \frac{a(a-bc)}{2b} - \frac{(a+bc)(a-bc)}{4b}dF(a) \\
& + \int_{bc}^{Q+bc} \frac{(a-bc)^2}{2b}dF(a) + \int_{Q+bc}^{2Q-Q_{E,M}+bc} -\frac{1}{2b}Q^2 + \frac{a-bc}{b}QdF(a) \\
& + \int_{2Q-Q_{E,M}+bc}^{\infty} -\frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} + \frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} - cQ \\
& \qquad\qquad -\frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b} + \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}QdF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

For $h > 0$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M}+h) - f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M}) \\
= \; & -\pi(Q_{E,M}+h) + \int_0^{bc} -\frac{(a-bc)^2}{8b} + \frac{a(a-bc)}{2b} - \frac{(a+bc)(a-bc)}{4b}dF(a) \\
& + \int_{bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+h} \frac{(a-bc)^2}{2b}dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc+h}^{2Q_{E,M}-Q_{E,M}+bc+2h} -\frac{1}{2b}(Q_{E,M}+h)^2 + \frac{a-bc}{b}(Q_{E,M}+h)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{2Q_{E,M}-Q_{E,M}+bc+2h}^{\infty} -\frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} + \frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} - c(Q_{E,M}+h) \\
& \quad -\frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b} + \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}(Q_{E,M}+h)dF(a) \\
& +\pi Q_{E,M} - \int_0^{bc} -\frac{(a-bc)^2}{8b} + \frac{a(a-bc)}{2b} - \frac{(a+bc)(a-bc)}{4b}dF(a) \\
& - \int_{bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc} \frac{(a-bc)^2}{2b}dF(a) - \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{2Q_{E,M}-Q_{E,M}+bc} -\frac{1}{2b}Q^{*2} + \frac{a-bc}{b}Q_{E,M}dF(a) \\
& - \int_{2Q_{E,M}-Q_{E,M}+bc}^{\infty} \Big(-\frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} + \frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} - cQ_{E,M} \\
& \qquad\qquad -\frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b} + \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b}Q_{E,M}\Big)dF(a) \\
= \; & -\pi h + h\int_{Q_{E,M}+bc+2h}^{\infty} \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b} - cdF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc+h}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+2h} -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a-bc)(Q_{E,M}+h)}{b} + \frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} \\
& \quad -\frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} + cQ_{E,M} + \frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b}dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\quad - \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc} -\frac{1}{2b}Q^{*2} + \frac{a-bc}{b}Q_{E,M}dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+h} \frac{(a-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} - \frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} + cQ_{E,M} \\
&\qquad\qquad + \frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b}dF(a) \\
= &\quad h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{\infty} \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b} - cdF(a)\Big) - h\int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+2h} \frac{a-Q_{E,M}+bc}{2b} - cdF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc+h}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+2h} -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a-bc)(Q_{E,M}+h)}{b} + \frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} \\
&\qquad -\frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} + cQ_{E,M} + \frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b}dF(a) \\
&\quad - \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc} -\frac{1}{2b}Q^{*2} + \frac{a-bc}{b}Q_{E,M}dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+h} \frac{(a-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} - \frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} + cQ_{E,M} \\
&\qquad\qquad + \frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b}dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $u(a) := -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a-bc)(Q_{E,M}+h)}{b} + \frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} - \frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} + cQ_{E,M} + \frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b}$ and $w(a) := \frac{(a-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} - \frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} + cQ_{E,M} + \frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b}$. $u(a)$ is concave and maximized at $Q_{E,M}+bc+4h$. $w(a)$ is convex and minimized at $Q_{E,M}+bc$. So,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\quad u(a) \\
\leq &\quad u(Q_{E,M}+bc+2h) \\
= &\quad -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+2h-bc)(Q_{E,M}+h)}{b} + \frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+2h+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} \\
&\quad +cQ_{E,M} - \frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+2h)(Q_{E,M}+bc+2h+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} \\
&\quad +\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+2h-Q_{E,M}+bc)(Q_{E,M}+bc+2h-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b} \\
= &\quad -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(Q_{E,M}+2h)(Q_{E,M}+h)}{b} + \frac{(2Q_{E,M}+2h)^2}{8b} + cQ_{E,M} \\
&\quad -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+2h)(2Q_{E,M}+2h)}{2b} + \frac{(2bc+2h)2h}{4b} \\
= &\quad \frac{h^2}{b}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& u(a) \\
\geq\ & u(Q_{E,M}+bc+h) \\
=\ & -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h-bc)(Q_{E,M}+h)}{b}+\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} \\
& +cQ_{E,M}-\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h)(Q_{E,M}+bc+h+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} \\
& +\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h-Q_{E,M}+bc)(Q_{E,M}+bc+h-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b} \\
=\ & -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)(Q_{E,M}+h)}{b}+\frac{(2Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{8b}+cQ_{E,M} \\
& -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h)(2Q_{E,M}+h)}{2b}+\frac{(2bc+h)h}{4b} \\
=\ & -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b} \\
& +\frac{4Q^{*2}+4Q_{E,M}h+h^2-8Q_{E,M}-8bcQ_{E,M}-8Q_{E,M}h-4Q_{E,M}h-4bch-4h^2}{8b} \\
& +cQ_{E,M} \\
=\ & \frac{3h^2}{8b}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& w(a) \\
\geq\ & w(Q_{E,M}+bc) \\
=\ & \frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc-bc)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b}-\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc)(Q_{E,M}+bc+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} \\
& +cQ_{E,M}+\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc-Q_{E,M}+bc)(Q_{E,M}+bc-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b} \\
=\ & \frac{Q^{*2}}{2b}+\frac{(2Q_{E,M})^2}{8b}-\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc)(2Q_{E,M})}{2b}+cQ_{E,M}=0
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& w(a) \\
\leq\ & w(Q_{E,M}+bc+h) \\
=\ & \frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h-bc)^2}{2b}+\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} \\
& -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h)(Q_{E,M}+bc+h+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b}+cQ_{E,M} \\
& +\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h-Q_{E,M}+bc)(Q_{E,M}+bc+h-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b} \\
=\ & \frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b}+\frac{(2Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{8b}-\frac{(Q_{E,M}+bc+h)(2Q_{E,M}+h)}{2b}+cQ_{E,M}+\frac{(2bc+h)h}{4b}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{1}{8b}\big(4Q_{E,M}^2 + Q_{E,M}h + 4h^2 + 4Q^{*2} + 4Q_{E,M}h + h^2 - 8Q^{*2} - 8Q_{E,M}bc - 8Q_{E,M}h \\
&\quad -4Q_{E,M}h - 4bch - 4h^2\big) + \frac{4bch + 2h^2}{8b} - cQ_{E,M} \\
&= \frac{3h^2 - 8bcQ_{E,M}}{8b} - cQ_{E,M} \\
&= \frac{3h^2}{8b}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, for $Q \geq Q_{E,M}$ and $h > 0$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M}+h) - f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M}) \\
&= h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{\infty} \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} - cdF(a)\Big) - h\int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+2h} \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} - cdF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc+h}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+2h} -\frac{(Q_{E,M}+h)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a-bc)(Q_{E,M}+h)}{b} + \frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} \\
&\qquad -\frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} + cQ_{E,M} + \frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b}dF(a) \\
&\quad + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+h} \frac{(a-bc)^2}{2b} + \frac{(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)^2}{8b} - \frac{a(a+Q_{E,M}-bc)}{2b} + cQ_{E,M} \\
&\qquad\qquad + \frac{(a-Q_{E,M}+bc)(a-Q_{E,M}-bc)}{4b}dF(a) \\
&\in h\Big(-\pi + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{\infty} \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} - cdF(a)\Big) - h\int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+2h} \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} - cdF(a) \\
&\quad + \Big[\int_{Q_{E,M}+bc+h}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+2h} \frac{h^2}{b}dF(a), \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{Q_{E,M}+bc+2h} \frac{3h^2}{8b}dF(a)\Big]
\end{aligned}
$$

So,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\lim_{h\to 0}\frac{f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M}+h) - f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M})}{h} &= -\pi + \int_{Q_{E,M}+bc}^{\infty} \frac{a - Q_{E,M} + bc}{2b} - cdF(a) \\
&= \lim_{h\to 0}\frac{f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M}) - f_{Buyer}(Q_{E,M}-h)}{h}
\end{aligned}
$$

and thus f_{Buyer} is differentiable at $Q_{E,M}$ and its derivative is given as above. The result holds for $K = c$. $\square$

Proof of Theorem 12 We can show this inequality by comparing each first order derivative for three cases; for any $Q \geq 0$,

$$
-\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{a - Q + bc}{2b} - KdF(a)
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= -\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{3a-3Q+bc-a+Q+bc}{4b} - KdF(a) \\
&= -\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b} - \frac{a-Q-bc}{4b} - KdF(a) \\
&= -\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b} - KdF(a) - \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{a-Q-bc}{4b} dF(a) \\
&\leq -\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b} - KdF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

So, $Q_{E,S}$ should be greater than or equal to $Q_{E,M}$ since $-\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{3a-3Q+bc}{4b} - KdF(a)$ is decreasing function in $Q \geq 0$. Now, for any $Q \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\pi + \int_{Q+2bK-bc}^{\infty} \frac{a-Q+bc}{2b} - KdF(a) \\
&= -\pi + \int_{0}^{\infty} (\frac{a-Q+bc}{2b} - K)^{+} dF(a) \\
&= -\pi + \int_{0}^{\infty} (\frac{x-Q+bc}{2b} - K)^{+} dF(x) \\
&\geq -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (\frac{x-Q+bc}{2b} - K)^{+} dF(x) dF(a) \\
&\geq -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (\frac{x-Q+bc}{2b} - K)^{+} - (\frac{x-Q+bc}{2b} - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+} dF(x) dF(a) \\
&= -\pi + \int_{Q+bK}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-K)^{+} - (p - \frac{a-Q}{b})^{+} dA(Q)(p) dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, $Q_{E,M}$ is greater than or equal to tQ^{*}. Thus, the result holds. □

Proof of Lemma 21 For the buyer who has zero demand fluctuation,

$$-\pi + \int_{Q_n+bc}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-c)^{+} - (p - \frac{a-Q_n}{b})^{+} dH_n(p) dF(a) = 0$$

Then the first derivative of buyer's objective function who has $\phi \neq 0$ demand fluctuation is

$$-\pi + \int_{Q-\phi+bc}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-c)^{+} - (p - \frac{a+\phi-Q}{b})^{+} dH_n(p) dF(a)$$

and then put $Q_n + \phi$ in the first derivative of buyer's objective function so that

$$-\pi + \int_{Q_n+\phi-\phi+bc}^{\infty} \int_{0}^{\infty} (p-c)^{+} - (p - \frac{a+\phi-(Q_n+\phi)}{b})^{+} dH_n(p) dF(a)$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= -\pi + \int_{Q_n+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} (p-c)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q_n}{b})^+ dH_n(p)dF(a) \\
&= 0
\end{aligned}
$$

So, the result holds. □

Proof of Theorem 14 Let p^* be the optimal solution. Suppose that

$$
\frac{\int_{\Omega_G} adG(\phi) - \int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} bdG(\phi)} \geq K
$$

Then, by Theorem 13,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\max \quad & p(\int_{\Omega_G} a + \phi - bpdG(\phi)) - c(\int_{\Omega_G} a + \phi - bpdG(\phi)) \\
\text{subject to} \quad & p \leq K
\end{aligned} \tag{120}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\max \quad & p(\int_{\Omega_G} a + \phi - bp - Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi)) + K\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi) \\
& -c(\int_{\Omega_G} a + \phi - bpdG(\phi)) \\
\text{subject to} \quad & K \leq p
\end{aligned} \tag{121}
$$

Since $\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi) = 0$, then (120) and (121) are equivalent to

$$
\begin{aligned}
\max \quad & p(a-bp) - c(a-bp) \\
\text{subject to} \quad & p \leq K
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\max \quad & p(a - bp - \frac{\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}) + K\frac{\int_{\Omega_G} Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)} - c(a-bp) \\
\text{subject to} \quad & K \leq p
\end{aligned}
$$

Then by the same procedure as in Theorem 3, the result holds. □

Proof of Lemma 22 Suppose that $Q_1 < Q_2$. First, let's show that it is Lipschitz continuous. This holds directly from Lemma 2 since $A(Q) \in \mathcal{P}$. Now, need to show that it is strictly nonincreasing. WLOG, assume that $\nabla f(A(Q_1))(Q_1)$ and $\nabla f(A(Q_2))(Q_2)$ are not equal to π.

$$
\nabla f(A(Q_1))(Q_1) = -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty} \{(p-K)^+ - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dA(Q_1)(p)dF(a)
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&> -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dA(Q_2)(p)dF(a) \\
&\geq -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dA(Q_2)(p)dF(a) \\
&\geq -\pi + \int_{Q_2+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dA(Q_2)(p)dF(a) \\
&= \nabla f(A(Q_2))(Q_2)
\end{aligned}
$$

The second strict inequality holds by the followings; let $r(Q) = \frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dA(Q_1)(p)dF(a) \\
= & -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
= & -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a) \\
> & -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$= \quad -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}\{(p-K)^+ - (p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dA(Q_2)(p)dF(a)$$

where the strict inequality should hold by the following reason: suppose that

$$\begin{aligned}
& -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a) \\
= \quad & -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

Equivalently,

$$\begin{aligned}
& -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K)dF(x)dF(a) \\
= \quad & -\pi + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+ \\
& \qquad -(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bK}^{\infty}\int_{\{x:\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\leq\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\leq\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}\}}(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+
\end{aligned}$$

$$-(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a)$$

Since

$$\begin{aligned}
& (\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+-(\frac{x-r(Q_1)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+ \\
\geq \ & (\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+-(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+
\end{aligned}$$

and

$$(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-K) \ \geq \ (\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-K)^+-(\frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+$$

, equivalently, for all $a \in \{a \geq 0 : F(a) > F(Q_1+bK)\} \neq \emptyset$ and all $x \in \{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(Q_2+2bK-bc)\} \neq \emptyset$,

$$\frac{a-Q_1}{b} \leq \frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}$$

So, for all $a \in \{a \geq 0 : F(a) > F(Q_1+bK)\}$ and all $x \in \{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(r(Q_2)+2bK-bc)\}$

$$\begin{aligned}
& \frac{a-Q_1}{b} \leq \frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \\
\text{iff} \quad & \frac{a_{\max}-Q_1}{b} \leq \frac{x-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \quad \forall x \in \{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(r(Q_2)+2bK-bc)\} \\
\text{iff} \quad & \frac{a_{\max}-Q_1}{b} \leq \frac{\underline{x}-r(Q_2)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2} \\
\text{iff} \quad & 2a_{\max}-2Q_1 \leq \underline{x}-r(Q_2)+bc \\
\text{iff} \quad & a_{\max}-\underline{x} \leq 2Q_1-r(Q_2)-a_{\max}+bc \\
\text{iff} \quad & a_{\max}-\underline{x} \leq -(a_{\max}-Q_1-bc)-(r(Q_2)-Q_1)
\end{aligned}$$

, where $a_{\max} := \inf\{a \geq Q_1+bK : F(a)=1\}$, $\underline{x} := \inf\{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(r(Q_2)+2bK-bc)\}$. Note that $r(Q) \geq Q$ for all Q since

$$\begin{aligned}
Q-r(Q) &= Q-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)} \\
&= \frac{\int_{\Omega_G}QdG(\phi)-\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{\int_{\Omega_G} Q + \phi dG(\phi) - \int_{\Omega_G} [Q+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)} \\
&\leq 0
\end{aligned}
$$

where the second equality holds since $\int_{\Omega_G} \phi dG(\phi) = 0$. Since $Q_1 < Q_2 \leq \overline{Q} < a_{\max}$, $Q_1 + bc \leq Q_1 + bK \leq a_{max}$ and $Q \leq r(Q)$ for all Q,

$$
\begin{aligned}
a_{\max} - \underline{x} &\leq -(a_{\max} - Q_1 - bc) - (r(Q_2) - Q_1) \\
&\leq -(a_{\max} - Q_1 - bc) - (r(Q_2) - r(Q_1)) \\
&< 0
\end{aligned}
$$

But,

$$
\underline{x} = \inf\{x \geq 0 : F(x) > F(Q_2 + 2bK - bc)\} \leq \inf\{x \geq Q_1 + bK : F(x) = 1\} = a_{\max}
$$

So, the strict inequality should hold. □

Proof of Lemma 23 Let $R(Q) := \int_{\Omega_G} [Q+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)$ and $r(Q) := \frac{\int_{\Omega_G} [Q+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}$. For $Q_1 < Q_2$, we have $\frac{a-Q_2}{b} < \frac{a-Q_1}{b}$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} R(Q_1)\{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} Q_2\{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\} dH(p) dF(a)| \\
= & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (R(Q_1) - R(Q_2)) \{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} R(Q_2)\{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} R(Q_2)\{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\} dH(p) dF(a)| \\
= & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} (R(Q_1) - R(Q_2)) \{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc} \int_0^{\infty} R(Q_2)\{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} R(Q_2)\{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\} dH(p) dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} R(Q_2)\{(p-c) - (p - \frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\} dH(p) dF(a)|
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= \; & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& - \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
= \; & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a) \\
& + \int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)\{(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
\leq \; & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)\{(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})^+-(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b})^+\}dH(p)dF(a)| \\
\leq \; & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,(\frac{a-Q_2}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)(\frac{a-Q_1}{b}-\frac{a-Q_2}{b})dH(p)dF(a)| \\
\leq \; & |\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,(\frac{Q_2+bc-Q_1}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)| \\
& +|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty (R(Q_1)-R(Q_2))\,(\frac{a}{b})dH(p)dF(a)|
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& +\left|\int_{Q_1+bc}^{Q_2+bc}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)(\frac{Q_2+bc-Q_1}{b}-c)dH(p)dF(a)\right| \\
& +\left|\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^\infty R(Q_2)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})dH(p)dF(a)\right| \\
\leq\ & |\left(R(Q_1)-R(Q_2)\right)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})| + |\left(R(Q_1)-R(Q_2)\right)\int_0^\infty \frac{a}{b}dF(a)| + 2|R(Q_2)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})| \\
=\ & \Big(\frac{|Q_2-Q_1|+\int_0^\infty adF(a)}{b}\Big)|R(Q_2)-R(Q_1)| + 2|R(Q_2)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})| \\
\leq\ & \Big(\frac{|Q_2-Q_1|+\int_0^\infty adF(a)}{b}\Big)|Q_2-Q_1| + 2|R(Q_2)(\frac{Q_2-Q_1}{b})| \\
=\ & \Big(\frac{|Q_2-Q_1|+\int_0^\infty adF(a)+2Q_2}{b}\Big)|Q_2-Q_1|
\end{aligned}
$$

Again, for $Q_1 < Q_2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q_1)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q_1)}{b}-c)^2dF(a) - \frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q_2)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q_2)}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{r(Q_1)+bc}^{r(Q_2)+bc}(\frac{a-r(Q_1)}{b}-c)^2dF(a) + \int_{r(Q_2)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q_1)}{b}-c)^2-(\frac{a-r(Q_2)}{b}-c)^2dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{r(Q_1)+bc}^{r(Q_2)+bc}(\frac{a-r(Q_1)}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
& \qquad + \int_{r(Q_2)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q_1)}{b}-c+\frac{a-r(Q_2)}{b}-c)(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{r(Q_1)+bc}^{r(Q_2)+bc}(\frac{a-r(Q_1)}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
& \qquad + \int_{r(Q_2)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{2a-r(Q_1)-r(Q_2)}{b}-2c)(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{r(Q_1)+bc}^{r(Q_2)+bc}(\frac{a-r(Q_1)}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
& + \int_{r(Q_2)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{2a-2bc}{b})(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b}) - (\frac{r(Q_1)+r(Q_2)}{b})(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{r(Q_1)+bc}^{r(Q_2)+bc}(\frac{a-r(Q_1)}{b}-c)^2dF(a) \\
& + \int_{r(Q_2)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{2a-2bc}{b})(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b}) \\
& \qquad\qquad + (\frac{-r(Q_1)-r(Q_2)+2r(Q_2)-2r(Q_2)}{b})(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})dF(a)\Big) \\
=\ & \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{r(Q_1)+bc}^{r(Q_2)+bc}(\frac{a-r(Q_1)}{b}-c)^2dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&+\int_{r(Q_2)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{2a-2r(Q_2)-2bc}{b})(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})+(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})dF(a)\Big)\\
\leq\;& \frac{b}{4}\Big(\int_{r(Q_1)+bc}^{r(Q_2)+bc}(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})^2dF(a)+\int_{r(Q_2)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{2a}{b})(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})\\
&+\int_{r(Q_2)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})^2dF(a)\Big)\\
\leq\;& \frac{b}{4}\Big((\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})^2+(\frac{2E(a)}{b})(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})+(\frac{r(Q_2)-r(Q_1)}{b})^2\Big)\\
=\;& \Big(\frac{(r(Q_2)-r(Q_1))+E(a)}{2b}\Big)(r(Q_2)-r(Q_1))\\
\leq\;& \Big(\frac{(Q_2-Q_1)+E(a)}{2b}\Big)(Q_2-Q_1)
\end{aligned}
$$

So, for $Q_1 < Q_2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
&|\left(\int_{Q_1+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q_1}{b}\right)^+dH_n(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_1+\phi]^+dG(\phi)\\
&+\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_1+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty}b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_1+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2\\
&-\left(\int_{Q_2+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q_2}{b}\right)^+dH_n(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_2+\phi]^+dG(\phi)\\
&-\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_2+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty}b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_2+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2|\\
\leq\;& |(Q_1-Q_2)\Big(\frac{(Q_2-Q_1)+E(a)+2Q_2}{b}\Big)|+|(Q_2-Q_1)\Big(\frac{(Q_2-Q_1)+E(a)}{2b}\Big)|\\
=\;& |Q_1-Q_2|(\frac{3|Q_2-Q_1|+3E(a)+4Q_2}{2b})
\end{aligned}
$$

The result holds. □

Proof of Lemma 24 $\int_{\Omega_G}Q_n(\phi)dG(\phi)=\int_{\Omega_G}[Q_n+\phi]^+dG(\phi)$ where Q_n is the solution to

$$
-\pi_n+\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+dH_n(p)dF(a)=0
$$

First, need to check if there exists $Q^*>0$ such that Q^* is maximizer to

$$
\left(\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)
$$

$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)$$

However, for any $Q^* > 0$,

$$\begin{aligned}
&\left(\int_{0+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+ - \left(p-\frac{a-0}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[0+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)\\
&+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[0+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[0+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)\\
= & \left(\int_{bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+ - \left(p-\frac{a}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)\\
&+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)\\
= & \left(\int_{bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+ - \left(p-\frac{a}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)\\
&+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)\\
&+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)\\
> & \left(\int_{bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+ - \left(p-\frac{a}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)\\
&+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

where $\int_{\Omega_G}[0+\phi]^+ dG(\phi) = \int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi) \geq 0$. Let $r(Q^*) := \frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}$ and thus $r(Q^*) \geq 0$.

$$\begin{aligned}
&\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+ dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)\\
= & \; b\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(0)}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})^2 dF(a)
\end{aligned}$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(0)}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
&= \frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c-\frac{r(Q^*)-r(0)}{b})^2 dF(a)\\
&= \frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)^2+2(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)\left(\frac{r(Q^*)-r(0)}{b}\right)\\
&\qquad\qquad +\left(\frac{r(Q^*)-r(0)}{b}\right)^2 dF(a)\\
&= \frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)^2+(r(Q^*)-r(0))\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)\\
&\quad +\frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}\left(\frac{r(Q^*)-r(0)}{b}\right)^2 dF(a)\\
&= \frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}\left(\frac{r(Q^*)-r(0)}{b}\right)^2 dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)^2\\
&\quad +(r(Q^*)-r(0))\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)\\
&> \frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)+(r(Q^*)-r(0))\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)\\
&= (r(Q^*)-r(0))\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)+\frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
&\geq (r(Q^*)-r(0))\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{2b}-\frac{c}{2})dF(a)dF(a)\\
&\quad +\frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
&= (r(Q^*)-r(0))\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{x-r(Q^*)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-c)dF(x)dF(a)\\
&\quad +\frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
&\geq (r(Q^*)-r(0))\times\\
&\quad \int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{x-r(Q^*)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-c)^+-(\frac{x-r(Q^*)}{2b}+\frac{c}{2}-\frac{a-Q^*}{b})^+dF(x)dF(a)\\
&\quad +\frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)\\
&= (r(Q^*)-r(0))\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_{0}^{\infty}\{(p-c)-(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b})^+\}dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\\
&\quad +\frac{b}{4}\int_{r(Q^*)+bc}^{\infty}(\frac{a-r(Q^*)}{b}-c)^2 dF(a)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
= \; & \frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)-\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}\times \\
& \left(\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right) \\
& +\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\int_{0+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-0}{b}\right)^+dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[0+\phi]^+dG(\phi) \\
& +\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[0+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[0+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 \\
> \; & \left(\int_{bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a}{b}\right)^+dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+dG(\phi) \\
& +\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a) \\
> \; & \left(\int_{bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a}{b}\right)^+dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+dG(\phi) \\
& +\left(\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)-\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+dG(\phi)\right)\times \\
& \left(\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right) \\
& +\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)\int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G}dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 \\
= \; & \int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+dG(\phi)\left(\int_{bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a}{b}\right)^+dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right) \\
& -\int_{\Omega_G}[\phi]^+dG(\phi)\left(\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right) \\
& +\left(\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)\right)\left(\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2$$

$$> \left(\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)\right)\left(\int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)$$

$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q^*+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2$$

where the last inequality holds since $Q^*>0$ and

$$\int_{bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)$$

$$> \int_{Q^*+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q^*}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)$$

So, $Q^*>0$ can not be maximizer. Moreover, let $\underline{Q} := \sup\{Q : \int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)=0\}$ and then take any $Q^*>\underline{Q}$

$$\left(\int_{\underline{Q}+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-\underline{Q}}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[\underline{Q}+\phi]^+dG(\phi)$$

$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\underline{Q}+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[\underline{Q}+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)$$

$$= \int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)\int_{bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)$$

For any $Q>\underline{Q}$, by the same procedure as above,

$$\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)\int_{bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)$$

$$> \left(\int_{Q+bc}^{\infty}\int_0^{\infty}(p-c)^+-\left(p-\frac{a-Q}{b}\right)^+ dA(Q^*)(p)dF(a)\right)\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)$$

$$+\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi) \int_{\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}+bc}^{\infty} b\left(\frac{a-\frac{\int_{\Omega_G}[Q+\phi]^+dG(\phi)}{\int_{\Omega_G} dG(\phi)}}{2b}-\frac{c}{2}\right)^2 dF(a)$$

Thus, the result holds. $\square$

Proof of Theorem 17 By the Lemma 24, the only equilibrium point is $\{\int_{\Omega_G} Q^*(\phi)dG(\phi)\} =$

0. Using the proof of Theorem 9, the result holds. $\square$

Bibliography

[1] Ahuja, R. K., Magnanti, T. L., and Orlin, J. B., *Network Flows.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1993.

[2] Anderson, C. and Wilson, J., "Wait or buy? The strategic consumer: Pricing and profit implications," *Contact*, vol. 54, no. 3, pp. 299–306, 2003.

[3] Anily, S., "The vehicle-routing problem with delivery and back-haul options," *Naval Research Logistics Quarterly*, vol. 43, pp. 415–434, 1996.

[4] Archetti, C., Speranza, M. G., and Hertz, A., "A tabu search algorithm for the split delivery vehicle routing problem," *Transportation Science*, vol. 40, no. 1, pp. 64–73, 2006.

[5] Aviv, Y. and Pazgal, A., "Optimal pricing of seasonal products in the presence of forward-looking consumers," *Manufacturing & Service Operations Management*, 2007.

[6] Bachelier, L., "Theorie de la speculation," *Annales Scientifiques de lEcole Normale Superieure*, vol. 3, no. 17, pp. 21–86, 1900.

[7] Beardwood, J., Halton, J. H., and Hammersley, J. M., "The shortest path through many points," *Proceedings of the Cambridge Philosophical Society*, vol. 55, pp. 299–327, 1959.

[8] Beckmann, M., "A continuous model of transportation," *Econometrica*, vol. 20, no. 4, pp. 643–660, 1952.

[9] Benveniste, A., Priouret, P., and Métivier, M., *Adaptive algorithms and stochastic approximations.* Springer-Verlag New York, Inc. New York, NY, USA, 1990.

[10] Black, F. and Scholes, M., "The Pricing of Options and Corporate Liabilities," *The Journal of Political Economy*, vol. 81, no. 3, pp. 637–654, 1973.

[11] Blumenfeld, D. E., Burns, L. D., Daganzo, C. F., Frick, M. C., and Hall, R. W., "Reducing logistics costs at general motors," *Interfaces*, vol. 17, no. 1, pp. 26–47, 1987.

[12] Blumenfeld, D. E., Burns, L. D., Diltz, J. D., and Daganzo, C. F., "Analyzing trade-offs between transportation, inventory and production costs on freight networks," *Transportation Research*, vol. 19B, no. 5, pp. 361–380, 1985.

[13] Brown, A., Lee, H., and Petrakian, R., "Xilinx Improves Its Semiconductor Supply Chain Using Product and Process Postponement," *Interfaces*, vol. 30, no. 4, pp. 65–80, 2000.

[14] Burns, L. D., Hall, R. W., Blumenfeld, D. E., and Daganzo, C. F., "Distribution strategies that minimize transportation and inventory costs," *Operations Research*, vol. 33, no. 3, pp. 469–490, 1985.

[15] Campbell, J. F., "Designing logistics systems by analyzing transportation, inventory and terminal cost tradeoffs," *Journal of Business Logistics*, vol. 11, no. 1, pp. 159–179, 1990.

[16] Campbell, J. F., "Freight consolidation and routing with transportation economies of scale," *Transportation Research*, vol. 24B, pp. 345–361, 1990.

[17] Campbell, J. F., "Continuous and discrete demand hub location problems," *Transportation Research*, vol. 27B, no. 6, pp. 473–482, 1993.

[18] Campbell, J. F., "One-to-many distribution with transshipments: An analytic model," *Transportation Science*, vol. 27, pp. 330–340, 1993.

[19] Chow, Y., "On a Strong Law of Large Numbers for Martingale," *The Annals of Mathematical Statistics*, vol. 38, no. 2, p. 610, 1967.

[20] Clewlow, L. and Strickland, C., *Energy derivatives: pricing and risk management.* Lacima, London, 2000.

[21] Cohen, M. and Agrawal, N., "An analytical comparison of long and short term contracts," *IIE Transactions*, vol. 31, no. 8, pp. 783–796, 1999.

[22] Cooper, W., Homem-de Mello, T., and Kleywegt, A., "Models of the Spiral-Down Effect in Revenue Management," *Operations Research*, vol. 54, no. 5, pp. 968–987, 2006.

[23] Daganzo, C. F., "An approximate analytic model of many-to-many demand responsive transportation systems," *Transportation Research*, vol. 12B, pp. 325–333, 1978.

[24] Daganzo, C. F., "The distance traveled to visit N points with a maximum of C stops per vehicle: An analytic model and an application," *Transportation Science*, vol. 18, pp. 331–350, 1984.

[25] Daganzo, C. F., "The length of tours in zones of different shapes," *Transportation Research*, vol. 18B, no. 2, pp. 135–145, 1984.

[26] Daganzo, C. F., "Supplying a single location from heterogeneous sources," *Transportation Research*, vol. 19B, no. 5, pp. 409–419, 1985.

[27] Daganzo, C. F., "The break-bulk role of terminals in many-to-many logistic networks," *Operations Research*, vol. 35, pp. 543–555, 1987.

[28] Daganzo, C. F., "A comparison of in-vehicle and out-of-vehicle freight consolidation strategies," *Transportation Research*, vol. 22B, pp. 173–180, 1988.

[29] Daganzo, C. F., "Shipment composition enhancement at a consolidation center," *Transportation Research*, vol. 22B, pp. 103–124, 1988.

[30] Daganzo, C. F. and Hall, R., "A routing model for pickups and deliveries: No capacity restrictions on the secondary items," *Transportation Science*, vol. 27, pp. 315–329, 1993.

[31] Daganzo, C. F. and Newell, G. F., "Configuration of physical distribution networks," *Networks*, vol. 16, pp. 113–132, 1986.

[32] Dasci, A. and Laporte, G., "A continuous model for multistore competitive location," *Operations Research*, vol. 53, no. 2, pp. 263–280, 2005.

[33] Dasci, A. and Verter, V., "A continuous model for production-distribution system design," *European Journal of Operational Research*, vol. 129, no. 2, pp. 287–298, 2001.

[34] Dixit, A. and Pindyck, R., *Investment under uncertainty*. Princeton University Press Princeton, NJ, 1994.

[35] Dror, M., Laporte, G., and Trudeau, P., "Vehicle routing with split deliveries," *Discrete Applied Mathematics*, vol. 50, pp. 239–254, 1994.

[36] Dror, M. and Trudeau, P., "Savings by split delivery routing," *Transportation Science*, vol. 23, no. 2, pp. 141–145, 1989.

[37] Elmaghraby, W. and Keskinocak, P., "Dynamic Pricing in the Presence of Inventory Considerations: Research Overview, Current Practices, and Future Directions," *Management Science*, vol. 49, no. 10, pp. 1287–1309, 2003.

[38] Eydeland, A. and Wolyniec, K., *Energy and Power Risk Management: New Developments in Modeling, Pricing, and Hedging*. Wiley, 2003.

[39] Gabow, H. N. and Tarjan, R. E., "Efficient algorithms for a family of matroid intersection problems," *Journal of Algorithms*, vol. 5, pp. 80–131, 1984.

[40] Ghiani, G., Laporte, G., and Musmanno, R., *Introduction to Logistics Systems Planning and Control*. ChiChester, England: John Wiley & Sons, Ltd., 2004.

[41] Goetschalckx, M. and Jacobs-Blecha, C., "The vehicle routing problem with backhauls," *European Journal of Operational Research*, vol. 42, no. 1, pp. 39–51, 1989.

[42] Hall, R. W., "Travel distance through consolidation terminals on a rectangular grid," *Journal of the Operational Research Society*, vol. 35, pp. 1067–1078, 1984.

[43] Hall, R. W., "Comparison of strategies for routing shipments through transportation terminals," *Transportation Research*, vol. 21A, pp. 421–429, 1987.

[44] Hall, R. W., "Characteristics of multi-stop/multi-terminal delivery routes, with backhauls and unique items," *Transportation Research*, vol. 25B, pp. 391–403, 1991.

[45] Hall, R. W., "Design for local area freight networks," *Transportation Research*, vol. 27B, pp. 79–95, 1993.

[46] Kantorovitch, L., "On the translocation of masses," *Comptes Rendus (Doklady) de l'Académie des Sciences de l'URSS*, vol. 37, no. 7–8, pp. 199–201, 1942. reprinted in *Management Science*, **5(1)**, pp. 1–4, 1958.

[47] Kleindorfer, P. and Wu, D., "Integrating Long- and Short-Term Contracting via Business-to-Business Exchanges for Capital-Intensive Industries," *Management Science*, vol. 49, no. 11, pp. 1597–1615, 2003.

[48] Langevin, A., Mbaraga, P., and Campbell, J. F., "Continuous approximation models in freight distribution: An overview," *Transportation Research*, vol. 30B, no. 3, pp. 163–188, 1996.

[49] Laporte, G., "Location-routing problems," in *Vehicle Routing: Methods and Studies* (Golden, B. L. and Assad, A. A., eds.), ch. 9, pp. 163–197, Amsterdam, Netherlands: North-Holland, 1988.

[50] Laporte, G., Louveaux, F., and Mercure, H., "Models and exact solutions for a class of stochastic location-routing problems," *European Journal of Operational Research*, vol. 39, no. 1, pp. 71–78, 1989.

[51] Lee, C.-G., Epelman, M. A., White, C. C., and Bozer, Y. A., "A shortest path approach to the multiple-vehicle routing problem with split pick-ups," *Computers and Operations Research*, vol. 40, no. 4, pp. 265–284, 2006.

[52] Lee, H. and Whang, S., "The Impact of the Secondary Market on the Supply Chain," *Management Science*, vol. 48, no. 6, pp. 719–731, 2002.

[53] Levi, M., Kleindorfer, P., and Wu, D., "Codifiability, Relationship-Specific Information Technology Investment, and Optimal Contracting," *Journal of Management Information Systems*, vol. 20, no. 2, pp. 77–98, 2003.

[54] Levin, Y., McGill, J., and Nediak, M., "Optimal Dynamic Pricing of Perishable Items by a Monopolist Facing Strategic Consumers," tech. rep., Working paper, Queens University, 2006.

[55] Majd, S. and Pindyck, R., "Time to Build, Option Value, and Investment Decisions," 1987.

[56] Mendelson, H. and Tunca, T., "Business to business exchanges and supply chain contracting," tech. rep., Working paper, Graduate School of Business, Stanford University, Stanford, CA.,. 2003. Liquidity in industrial exchanges. Working paper, Graduate School of Business, Stanford University, Stanford, CA, 2002.

[57] Mingozzi, A., Giorgi, S., and Baldacci, R., "An exact method for the vehicle routing problem with backhauls," *Transportation Science*, vol. 33, no. 3, pp. 315–329, 1999.

[58] Mullaseril, P. A., Dror, M., and Leung, J., "Split-delivery routing heuristics in livestock feed distribution," *The Journal of the Operational Research Society*, vol. 48, no. 2, pp. 107–116, 1997.

[59] Newell, G. F., "Scheduling, location, transportation, and continuum mechanics; some simple approximations to optimization problems," *SIAM Journal on Applied Mathematics*, vol. 25, no. 3, pp. 346–360, 1973.

[60] Osman, I. H. and Wassan, N. A., "A reactive tabu search meta-heuristic for the vehicle routing problem with backhauls," *Journal of Scheduling*, vol. 5, no. 4, pp. 263–285, 2002.

[61] Ouyang, Y. and Daganzo, C. F., "Discretization and validation of the continuum approximation scheme for terminal system design," *Transportation Science*, vol. 40, no. 1, pp. 89–98, 2006.

[62] Peleg, B., Lee, H., and Hausman, W., "Short-term e-procurement strategies versus long-term contracts," *Production and Operations Management*, vol. 11, no. 4, pp. 458–479, 2002.

[63] Potvin, J.-Y., Duhamel, C., and Guertin, F., "A genetic algorithm for vehicle routing problem with backhauling," *Applied Intelligence*, vol. 6, pp. 345–355, 1996.

[64] Spinler, S., Huchzermeier, A., and Kleindorfer, P., "Risk hedging via options contracts for physical delivery," *OR Spectrum*, vol. 25, no. 3, pp. 379–395, 2003.

[65] Thangiah, S. R., Potvin, J.-Y., and Sun, T., "Heuristic approaches to vehicle routing with backhauls and time windows," *Computers and Operations Research*, vol. 23, no. 11, pp. 1043–1057, 1996.

[66] Toth, P. and Vigo, D., "An exact algorithm for the vehicle routing problem with backhauls," *Transportation Science*, vol. 31, pp. 372–385, 1997.

[67] Toth, P. and Vigo, D., "A heuristic algorithm for the symmetric and asymmetric vehicle routing problems with backhauls," *European Journal of Operational Research*, vol. 113, pp. 528–543, 1999.

[68] Triantis, A. and Hodder, J., "Valuing Flexibility as a Complex Option," *The Journal of Finance*, vol. 45, no. 2, pp. 549–565, 1990.

[69] Trigeorgis, L., *Real options.* MIT Press Cambridge, Mass, 1996.

[70] TUNCA, T. and ZENIOS, S., "Supply Auctions and Relational Contracts for Procurement," *Manufacturing & Service Operations Management*, vol. 8, no. 1, p. 43, 2006.

[71] VIDAL, C. J. and GOETSCHALCKX, M., "Strategic production-distribution models: A critical review with emphasis on global supply chain models," *European Journal of Operational Research*, vol. 98, no. 1, pp. 1–18, 1997.

[72] WILSON, J., ANDERSON, C., and KIM, S., "Optimal booking limits in the presence of strategic consumer behavior," *International Transactions in Operational Research*, vol. 13, no. 2, pp. 99–110, 2006.

[73] WU, D. and KLEINDORFER, P., "Competitive Options, Supply Contracting, and Electronic Markets," *Management Science*, vol. 51, no. 3, pp. 452–466, 2005.

[74] WU, D., KLEINDORFER, P., and ZHANG, J., "Optimal bidding and contracting strategies for capital-intensive goods," *European Journal of Operational Research*, vol. 137, no. 3, pp. 657–676, 2002.